



THE WORLD OF OTOME GAMES IS A TOUGH FOR MOBS.★

三嶋与夢  
イラスト／孟達

04

GC NOVELS

# ***Table of Contents***

[Illustrations](#)

[Prologue](#)

[Chapter 1 – Alzer Commonwealth](#)

[Chapter 2 – Academy](#)

[Chapter 3 – Twins](#)

[Chapter 4 – Nobles of the Commonwealth](#)

[Chapter 5 – Oath to the Sacred Tree](#)

[Chapter 6 – Betrayal](#)

[Chapter 7 – The Descendants of Adventurers](#)

[Chapter 8 – Sacred Tree's Sapling](#)

[Chapter 9 – A Despicable Trap](#)

[Chapter 10 – Marie's Turn](#)

[Chapter 11 – Leon's Turn](#)

[Chapter 12 – The One Horned Monster](#)

[Chapter 13 – Insensitive Protagonist](#)

[Epilogue](#)

[Afterword](#)

[Extra Story – Leon's Foreign School Life](#)

[Credits](#)

*Download all your fav Light Novels at*

*Just Light Novels*

## *Illustrations*



モブに敵は世界は  
世界です 04

THE WORLD OF OTOME GAMES IS A TOUGH FOR MOBS.

「いいからさつさと始めようか」

リオン・フォウ・  
バルトファルト

——ピエールの言葉は正しい。  
そうだ——騙される奴が悪いのだ。  
まるで悪役になつたアロガソツが、  
人差し指を俺に向けてくる。

『今更謝つても許してやらねーからな!』

ピエールの言葉を聞きながら、  
俺はポケットから取り出したグローブを手に付ける。

『何だ? 素手で戦うつてか!』

ピエールや取り巻きたちが笑つている中、  
俺は呆れて腰に手を当てた。

『騙される方が悪いんだよ!』

ピエール・イオ  
フェーヴェル

 ノエル・  
ベルトレ

 ルイーゼ・  
サラ・ラウルト

「は?  
あるんだけど?  
私もリオンに用事が

「え?  
何、この状況?  
おい、ルクシオン助ける」

「お礼なんていらないわ。それ  
より、少し付き合いなさいよ」

# **Prologue**

## **Part 1**

This thing called bond is something mysterious.

It won't connect even if you want it to connect and it will break easily.

And yet, there is also a type of undesired bond that you won't be able to sever no matter how hard you try.

I, Leon Fou Bartfalt is under the dazzling sun with my sleeves and cuffs rolled up.

I'm standing with deck brush in hand on the deck of my new airship, Einhorn.

The ship shaped airship has a characteristic horn at its bow just like its name showed.

The airship hull that is dyed red is decorated with gold and silver plating.

Its size is approximately 200 meter.

If you're looking just from its external appearance, this ship looks like something that your typical noble will like very much.

But, this thing is an airship that was constructed by my partner Luxion.

The level of its inside is different compared to this world's airship.

Because of some kind of ill fate, I—we ended up studying abroad at Alzer Commonwealth.

Because I have obtained the peerage of count, a position that is too much for a student like me, it's necessary for me to head to my study abroad destination with a fitting airship.

This Einhorn was constructed because of that.

I'm raising my voice above that airship's deck.

「Now then. Listen well you idiots!」

Lining up in front of me is the extraordinarily wicked woman who has been identified as my little sister from the previous life, Marie Fou Lafan and her happy friends.

My little sister from previous life looked unusually small and fragile for her age. But contrary to her appearance, she is a strong and determined woman.

Her hand is pressing on her long blonde hair because a strong wind is blowing.

We were at each other's throat until recently but, to think that she is actually my little sister from the previous life. I never thought of that even in my wildest dream.

Or rather, it's strange that I can't sever my bond with this girl even after reincarnating.

「Because it can't be helped. Really can't be helped! I ended up having to look after you guys from today. But, I have no interest feeding a lazy bunch like all of you!」

Lining up in front me are Julius and others with cleaning tool in hands.

After the war against Fanoss House, Julius Rafa Hohlfahrt splendidly ended up as a prince only in name. He protested while his navy blue hair is fluttering due to wind.

「We also have no intention of having you looking after us though.」

Julius showed his discontent with his back turned toward me. This guy is really irritating.

It's not just this guy.

The bunch in front of me—especially the conquest targets who appeared in “that otome game” are also expressing their discontent at me.

Julius's foster brother Jilk Fia Marmoreal tied his long green hair behind him.

「I agree with his highness's opinion. We have no intention letting you taking care of us. We are only obeying because it's an order from her majesty the queen.」

This Jilk is a scheming bastard with bad personality.

I retorted back at him.

「If this isn't an order from the queen Mylene-san, this is where I'm going to kick you down from the deck so you can become fish food. Be grateful you trashes.」

I'm going to teach these guys their place. Then Greg Fou Seberg turned a rebelling gaze toward me.

His characteristic is his bristling short red hair and his trained large body.

「Bartfalt, even we aren't going to study abroad because we want it.」

I'll return those exact words back at you.

「What a coincidence. I also don't' want to study abroad. And then I having to look after you guys at the same time too, just what kind of punishment game is this.」

When I laughed at them, Chris Fia Arclight pushed his glasses with his fingertip and complained.

This guy is a prodigy at sword that he is even called the candidate to be the next sword saint. His blue hair is parted to one side.

Unlike the sweltering Greg, this guy is a cool type muscle brain.

「Then don't go if you don't want it.」

—Even I want to do just that.

But—but!

I would be uneasy like that, that's why I'm heading to foreign country like this even though I don't even want to study abroad!

「Don't complain. Listen well, I am the owner of this ship, so you guys have the duty to obey me. Understand that. Do you get that, you understand right?」

Even though originally I should be going abroad alone, I got these guys forced on me too.

It's more or less an order from the king, that shitty bastard Roland.

I'm only obeying, partly because this is also a request from the lovely Mylene-san.

One of them theatrically shrugged his shoulders and shook his head. It's the narcissist with long purple hair that is tied and placed on his shoulder, Brad Fou Field.

He is a spoiled young master who is good with magic. His grades for theoretical class is excellent.

And then, he is also a man whose grades are horrible in practical skill classes.

「I never even dreamed that I will study abroad together with you like this. Is this what people called an undesirable but inseparable relationship?」

「That's my line! Why do I have to look after you guys! I'm really busy, so I won't have any time to look after you guys!」

I yelled in irritation. The remaining members looked at each other and conversed.

Marie's slave, a handsome elf whose age is still at the first half of his teenage, Kyle is sighing.

He is looking coldly at the obstinate group of five while talking with Marie about the future.

「I'm envious to everyone who isn't thinking of anything. More importantly, goshujin-sama. It looks like we won't have to worry about our meal from now.」

Marie—my little sister who not only troubled me at my previous life but even until this life, she nodded deeply at that comment.

「Yes, that's right. With big br—Leon here, we'll be able to eat every day.」

A student of the same grade who accompanied Marie, Cara Fou Wein has a slender build and straight long deep blue hair.

She felt indebted to Marie because she once helped her and so she accompanied her until this point.

「It's very wonderful to not have to worry about our meal, Marie-sama!」

I hid my eyes with left hand seeing the three rejoicing.

—You guys, how were you living until now?

I wiped my tears while speaking bluntly to the five idiots.

「I'll have you all do the work of cleaning the inside of the ship until we reach out destination of Alzer Commonwealth. Your pay will be 300 Dea per day. I'll exchange your pay with the currency of the commonwealth when we arrive there before handing it to you.」

Julius opened his eyes wide in shock hearing that his pay is 300 Dea.

「—Just 300 Dea you say?」

300 Dea—if it's converted to the value in my previous life, it would be around 30,000 yen.

Daily pay of 30,000 yen just for cleaning.

It seems that amount is astounding for Julius and others.

「How tyrannical」

Jilk also took a step back in shock.

Brad and the others were making a disbelieving face.

「You want to make us clean just for that much? That's insane!」

My shoulders dropped in exasperation.

「What's strange here is the heads of you guys, spoiled former young masters. Listen well, you're going to get paid 300 Dea for cleaning. This is already a staggering amount.」

Einhorn under Luxion's control doesn't need any crew.

That's why, the only work they can do is only cleaning.

It's offensive to look after these guys who aren't doing anything, so I thought to make them do some cleaning.

I even prepared the pay of 300 Dea for them, and yet they're looking at me like I'm a villain.

「Fight me Bartfalt! If I win you have to change this kind of treatment!」

Greg raised his deck brush and spoke a crazy line.

I feel miserable.

「If you want to make a joke do it after you finish cleaning. And then, I'm begging you here if you're going to joke make it something easier to understand. I almost thought that you were seriously saying that.」

「I'm serious here!」

I hid my face with my left hand once more and looked up to the sky.

Chris clenched his hand in frustration.

「Are you telling us to accept this kind of treatment? Damn it!」

He is looking really frustrated, but the term that I'm giving them is to work from nine until seventeen o'clock.

I even gave them two hours for a break.

Do I really have to be reproached like this?

「You guys are really useless.」

I grumbled. The five sent me gazes that are filled with anger hearing that.

In contrast Marie and others are walking into the ship's interior carrying the cleaning tool.

「Kyle, Cara, let's finish this quickly.」

「Ye~s. Most of the ship is already clean anyway, I think we'll only need to clean the toilet after cleaning the corridor.」

「Ah, I will clean the woman's toilet, Marie-sama!」

Marie and others seems to have fun.

「300 Dea just for cleaning, as expected big br—Leon is really soft.」

Marie left behind those words before going away. That girl isn't thorough when doing something as usual.

But, I'm scared because even someone like her will look cute after watching these five.

「Bartfalt, fight me already!」

Greg yelled. I sent him a cold gaze while turning my eyes toward the blue sky.

—Why do I have to study abroad with this kind of idiots?

And then, do I really have to go to the commonwealth that I even have to part from my two fiancées even though we were finally able to get engaged?

Everything—was caused by none other than “that terrible otome game” for having a sequel.

「I wonder if the two of them are well right now.」

「Oi, don’t ignore me!」

I ignored the noisy idiots and started cleaning the deck.

「BARTFAAALT!」

「You’re annoying! Be quiet and clean, you idiot five!」

I threw my deck brush at Greg.

—Why do I have to head to Alzer Commonwealth with the feeling of an employee transferring away from home, leaving Ange and Livia behind even though we had just gotten engaged?

.

## **Part 2**

The academy of Hohlfahrt Kingdom.

Livia was changing clothes in her room.

The jacket of her uniform that was hanged on the hanger had the mark of knight peerage sewed on it.

Livia—Olivia obtained a decoration from the battle against the former Fanoss Principality. She as a girl with bright brown hair that was cut in bob hairstyle.

Her blue eyes were clear and she gave a gentle atmosphere.

Her healthy body looked soft with large breasts.

When she looked at her underwear appearance on the mirror, she got the feeling that she got slightly bigger.

「Will it be better if I buy a new one? But, it will be expensive.」

She was pondering whether she should replace her old one while her hand reached toward her shirt.

Then she heard the door getting knocked rapidly.

『Livia, it's me.』

The owner of the voice was Ange—Angelica Rafa Redgrave.

Her blonde hair was braided into a bundle. She was a daughter of a duke with forceful looking red eyes.

And then, similar like Livia, she was also a girl who was engaged to Leon.

「Ah, yes.」

Livia reflexively replied, but she then remembered that she was only wearing underwear and hurriedly moved to grab her skirt.

「Eh, ah, uah?」

But, because she was too hurried her balance crumbled and she tumbled forward.

「Ouch」

Ange opened the door and entered inside at that timing.

「Livia, a letter from Leon is—what are you doing?」

Livia was on the floor with her butt sticking to the air. Ange approached her and lent her a hand.



Ange was different from Livia. She was an imposing girl.  
But, she was making a genuinely worried face in front of Livia.  
Her body that was moderately trained clearly had a nice figure even seen from above her uniform.  
She had breasts that were bigger than even Livia, but coupled with her atmosphere, she looked slimmer than Livia.  
Livia borrowed Ange's hand to stand up and smiled to gloss over it.  
「I'm sorry. I slipped.」  
「That's fine but, you're still in the middle of changing. You didn't need to be so hurried. Ah, putting that aside—」  
Ange turned her gaze toward the white sphere floating at the side.  
The sphere was as big as a softball. It had a single blue eye.  
Its appearance was the same like Luxion but with different coloring.  
The sphere, Creare was going in circles around Ange and Livia cheerfully.  
『A mail from master has arrived.』  
「Mail? What is it?」  
『It's like a letter. You can exchange words using it without writing on paper.』  
「Lost Item's technology is amazing.」  
Livia was impressed. Ange showed her the content of the mail that Creare printed out.

「This is from Leon. It seems his highness Julius and others are already making trouble for him.」

Livia read the content and smiled wryly.

.

『Are you two well? I'm already tired here.』

.

The mail was started with a disquieting writing, but Leon seemed healthy.

However, he wrote a lot of complaints about Julius and others.

.

『Today too JIlk went crazy and protested “This treatment is unfair!” he said. It became a fight when I scoffed and kicked his butt. It was a disaster.』

.

「Leon-san, is he alright?」

Livia was worried for Leon. Creare explained to her about the situation in detail.

『He is fine. Because Luxion is at his side. If they lay their hand on master, that guy won't stop with just a little payback. —He won't even leave any evidence behind.』

Ange made a troubled face because both master and servant were making disquieting remarks.

「Don't erase them. You understand? Absolutely don't erase them.」

『Oh, are you perhaps implying “you can erase them” by that?』

『I clearly meant those words literally. Why did you misunderstand that it has different meaning?』

Livia listened to that conversation while reading the last paragraph of the mail.

.

『I'm lonely that I can't meet both of you. I'm already homesick.』

.

『—Leon-san』

Livia looked worried. Creare gave an added explanation to her.

『This sentence is just a lip service.』

『Eh?』

According to Creare, Leon still seemed to be fine.

But, Livia smiled at the letter that was just like Leon.

『I'm relieved that Leon-san seems alright.』

Ange also agreed.

『Yeah. We also can't lose. By the way, don't you need to show the common students around the academy today?』

Livia hurriedly checked the time in respond to Ange's words.

『Tha, that's right! I have to hurry and prepare!』

Livia wore her uniform in a hurry. Ange helped her seeing that.

Creare's blue lens was staring at them.

## Part 3

Inside the ship's dining hall, I and Marie—and my partner Luxion were there.

This metallic colored sphere with a single red eye is Luxion's extension.

I often forgot but Luxion's main body is a spaceship.

The sphere floating here is nothing more than a terminal.

『Then, the country called Alzer Commonwealth is a strong and resourceful country that is exporting energy resources?』

Today too he is summarizing the talk of me and Marie with a calm electronic voice.

Marie stretched her small body while wiping the table. She replied curtly at the same time.

『That's right.』

『A strong and resourceful country with a sacred tree that is large like a mountain is it』

Our talk is about the Arzel Commonwealth that we are heading to.

I who didn't know that otome game had a sequel didn't have enough information.

Marie is the only one with information.

But, there is also a problem with Marie.

『—Is there anything else that you know?』

Marie is getting fed up because Luxion persistently continued asking.

「I'm, telling, you! I also don't remember! Do you think I can remember about a game that I played a long time ago? My memory is hazy.」

I sprayed the table with alcohol sprayer and wiped it while grumbling.

「The information that I heard from Mylene-san beforehand is still better.」

The information from Mylene-san was—.

Alzer Commonwealth is making the sacred tree as the object of their faith.

The sacred tree is the symbol of the commonwealth. There are six lands around the land where the sacred tree is residing.

The six lands are connected by the roots that are growing from the sacred tree.

Each of the six lands is governed by a noble. The six ruling nobles are called great noble.

Those six nobles decided the policy through discussion among themselves. It's a country formed from the cooperation of those great nobles.

Hohlfahrt Kingdom is also importing magic stone from Alzer Commonwealth.

—There was also war between both countries in the past.

Though the kingdom was defeated handily when they invaded.

After that, both countries somehow entered diplomatic relations that led to the current situation.

It's not like Hohlfahrt Kingdom is the only one. Many countries had invaded Alzer Kingdom for their resource.

To express Alzer Commonwealth in simple term, it is a strong country with abundant resource that never tasted defeat in defensive battle, something like that?

Even while complaining, Marie talked about the second game to us relying on her hazy memory.

「Right now there are only six great nobles, but in the past it was seven great nobles.」

「I heard from Mylene-san. If I remember right—the house that served as the chairman was destroyed ten years ago or something.」

「The daughter of that destroyed great noble is the main character of the second game.」

「Her name?」

「—The provisional family name was Beltre. But the player is the one to input her name so I don't know her name. She has pink hair in twintails and a really easygoing girl. Many of the choices for her lines gave lively feeling I think?」

It seems the main character is a girl with twintails and easygoing feel.

「That's unexpected. I thought that an otome game's character will be more docile.」

「It's because the main character of the first game had her brain filled with too much flower field that she was hated. Perhaps the developer reflected on that and made the main character of the second game an easygoing girl? Well, she is still better than the unpopular main character of the first game.」

I sent a cold gaze to the laughing Marie.

「—I'll shoot you dead if you say that in front of Livia.」

「I, I won't say it.」

Marie averted her gaze from me. Luxion looked at her.

『Well, let's postpone that topic for the future. Please tell us about the story of the second game in general.』

Marie recalled the story while telling us.

「Er~r, first the main character enrolled into the commonwealth's academy. The commonwealth's academy is high level, but even commoner can enroll into it. There the main character will get close with the conquest targets.」

『Education regardless of one's status? That's a really drastic policy for aristocracy. Aren't they worried that the commoners will revolt after they become educated?』

「I don't know anything about that. Isn't it just for the game's convenience?」

「That's really a blunt way to say it.」

Next Marie explained about the main character's history.

「The last boss is the current head of the house called "Rault". The main character's house was destroyed by that guy. I think, at the setting—the main character's mother rejected him at the past. It seems the last boss then destroyed her house as revenge.」

The house that served as the chairman got destroyed because of revenge for getting rejected?

Otome game is really amazing. No—is it that otome game that was amazing?

『Can one of the houses that were called the seven great nobles be destroyed just because of such reason?』

I set aside Luxion's question.

I laughed at that stereotyped pattern.

「It's not any different from the first game then. Otome game is all the same no matter which. She seems ordinary, but actually she got amazing ability or lineage~, that's the pattern isn't it?」

「It's gal game that is all the same inside with only the illustration changed」

「Don't lump them together! Each gal game has its uniqueness!」

「It's all the same in my eyes.」

『—Please continue.』

I complained at Marie who suddenly picked a fight with gal game, but Luxion stopped us.

Marie talked about the game's development after that with a disgruntled look.

「—The conquest targets are all connected with the six great nobles. The main character will reach happy end if she get married with someone among them and revive her house.」

I understood the romance part.

The problem is the last boss.

「How about the last boss? Will the world get destroyed if he is left alone?」

「I don't know until that far but, I think it'll be bad if he is left alone. Because, the last boss is the sacred tree.」

「—Ha? No, you just said that it's the head of Rault House!」

「That's why, the head of Rault House will fuse with the sacred tree!」

Marie went 「Ah, I remember!」 and talked happily.

「About this sacred tree, it's supplying the commonwealth with energy. The magic stones that they obtained from there are mostly sold to other countries. The sacred tree is rooted through the commonwealth, so they can obtain energy anywhere.」

That's amazing.

Apparently the reason they are a strong country with abundant resource is greatly related with the sacred tree.

「So that sacred tree will be the last boss.」

「At the end it'll stand up and become a disgusting monster that rampage around. It's amazingly huge and causes a lot of damage to the land when it rampage. The happy end is when the main character defeat it and plant the key item, sacred tree's sapling as the replacement. I think, she is also chosen as a priestess. And if I'm not wrong her lover will be the guardian or something—」

Things like priestess or guardian, it doesn't feel like they really matter.

But, certainly the last boss can't be left alone.

I thought of something here.

「Wait. Then won't it be fine if Luxion destroy the sacred tree? It'll be easy to destroy it before it rampage.」

Marie also nodded deeply.

「I think so. As long as the last boss is gone then there won't be any more problem. Luxion, bring out your beam. Beam!」

We sent Luxion gazes that are filled with expectation—but Luxion asked back instead.

『Is that really alright?』

「We're going to defeat it anyway, so it'll be better to do it earlier.」

『No, I'm asking whether it's alright for me to destroy the commonwealth.』

「—Eh?」

Apparently the commonwealth will perish if the sacred tree is destroyed.

What does he mean?

「No, wait a second. Why would the commonwealth perish even though the last boss is—ah!?!」

I finally noticed.

But, Marie is tilting her head.

「What? Let's defeat it right away.」

「Idiot! It'll be checkmate for the commonwealth if the sacred tree is defeated!」

「Why?」

「Their finance will be checkmated!」

The commonwealth can export magic stones to other countries only because they have the sacred tree.

But, if the sacred tree is gone, they will be forced to use those magic stones as replacement for the energy that is usually supplied by the sacred tree.

The commonwealth that is profiting from selling magic stone will lose their important industry.

Further speaking, losing the sacred tree will make the commonwealth fall into chaos and perish.

Having their energy supply gone will be like being suddenly unable to use electricity in our previous life.

Marie also realized that and she went pale.

「The, then, let's defeat it after it become the last boss just like we first planned.」

That will be safer.

I don't want to bear the responsibility of destroying the commonwealth.

「Yeah. Let's look forward to the main character and his friends' effort.」

We will just watch over the main character safely meeting the conquest targets and nurturing love.

That's what in my mind, but here Luxion is holding doubt.

『By the way, about the sacred tree's sapling, can it provide the same amount of energy like the fully grown sacred tree when it's still a sapling?』

「—That sound's impossible. Do you know anything about that?」

The sacred tree that is large like a mountain, and a sapling. I think that their capability will be completely different.

Marie also seemed to consider the same doubt.

「No, that—it was a happy end in the game, and I don't know about the setting in so much detail like that. There is no way I can know how their economy will become after that.」

「What're we going to do! At this rate the kingdom will also get troubled.」

『After all Hohlfahrt Kingdom is also importing magic stone from Alzer Commonwealth. Well, the kingdom isn't dependent on it, this only mean that they will lose one exporter of magic stone.』

「I don't know anything even if you ask me that! Talk of politic didn't come out at all in the ending!」

—What now.

Is Alzer Commonwealth actually in a great pinch right now?

Julius entered the dining hall while I and Marie are falling silent.

「Marie, are you safe!?」

Julius ran this way after seeing us. It seems he is misunderstanding.

Julius confirmed that Marie is unharmed before glaring my way.

「Bartfalt, I won't forgive you if you get closer to Marie!」

「No need to worry because my preference isn't a washboard like her. More importantly, get back to your work quickly.」

I can have a decent talk with Marie because of these guys.

As for Marie she is saying something like 「E, even I have breasts even if they're small!」 as though there is mountain in a plain.

It made me sad hearing that, so please don't put on airs like that.

But, Julius can't accept it.

「Marie is a wonderful woman!」

「I see. That's good. I have Ange and Livia, so I won't commit any mistake.」

In the first place, if I actually committed a mistake—my head will fly.

Ange papa doesn't look like someone who will forgive cheating at all.

No, I won't do that though.

I won't do any cheating.

Julius stood in front of Marie to cover her from me. It doesn't look like we'll be able to talk any more than this.

I sighed while going out from the dining hall.

「—Good grief」

.

## Part 4

Julius saw off Leon going out of the dining hall before turning toward Marie.

「Marie, did anything happen?」

Julius gently talked to Marie, but she looked somewhat tired.

「It's fine. In the first place Leon won't lay his hand on me.」

「That guy is also a man. It's best if you are careful.」

Marie didn't know what to say here. She spoke to Julius in dejection.

「Julius, I'll return to my cleaning. Julius too go back to your work.」

「No, but!」

「Qu~ick~ly!」

Marie pushed Julius's back.

「Marie, I'll stay with you!」

「The cleaning won't end like that! Return to your assigned place!」

Julius got chased out of the dining hall. There he found Luxion floating in the corridor.

Julius complained to Luxion.

「Oi, your master is trying to lay his hand on Marie even though he got fiancées already. Watch him properly!」

Julius pointed his finger and said that, then Luxion replied with a cold tone.

『Don't give me command. Return to your work.』

Luxion's attitude was cold unlike when he was dealing with Leon. It made Julius dumbfounded.

「E, a—」

Luxion took off his gaze from Julius.

Ahead of his gaze was Leon walking here while carrying deck brush on his shoulder.

「Luxion, I'm hungry so let's have lunch.」

『Master, there is still 45 minutes before the lunch time.』

「It's fine. Let's eat already.」

『It can't be helped.』

Although he was complaining, it looked like he was opening his heart toward Leon. Julius couldn't accept it somehow seeing that.

「Wha, what's with that thing!」

## **Part 5**

At Hohlfahrt Kingdom, Livia was showing the scholarship students around the academy.

Livia was carrying a binder that was holding some documents. After she finished giving explanation in general she looked toward the scholarship students.

「That's all the explanation. Is there any question?」

The students weren't noble, but they were still from well to do background.

They were son and daughter of wealthy merchant. Because of that from Livia's perspective they were like rich young master or young lady.

But there were also novelties among them. People who gained fame as adventurer were also mixed in there.

It could be said to be appropriate for the kingdom that gave respect for the adventurer occupation.

Their age was more than sixteen years old. There were even students older than Livia among them.

One student raised his hand.

「Er~r, Curtis-san.」

Livia called his name while looking at the document. The young man called Curtis brushed his long forelocks while speaking with a snobby tone.

「I'm grateful from the bottom of my heart for being able to enroll into the academy. Also, Olivia-san, do you have a man who you are going out with?」

Hearing that line, some people around him were looking exasperated while there were also students who jeered at him.

But, Curtis paid them no mind.

Livia replied with a smile.

「I have a wonderful fiancée.」

Curtis shrugged.

「My deepest apologies. I wish that I could meet you sooner.」

It seemed he wasn't a young man who would persistently hit on a girl.

But—the young man behind that Curtis, Aaron, he had brown hair that grew behind until his shoulder. His hair was held in place with a hair band.

He was also tall and the sleeves of his uniform were folded up.

His shirt was opened at the chest part and the body that could be seen from there was well trained.

(Good grief, I'm gonna puke watching these young masters. But—)

Aaron's eyes were staring at Livia with wild gleam.

Aaron had achieved success as adventurer. He received invitation from the kingdom asking if he wanted to enroll into the academy.

At first he looked down on the offer, but he decided to enroll thinking that a school life wouldn't be that bad.

After all Aaron was—.

(It has been a long time since I go to school. I'm going to have a lot of fun here. After all I've decided to have a blast in my second life.)

—A reincarnator.

(Guess I'll start with this Olivia woman first. She said that she has a fiancée but, that's not my business.)

Aaron's wicked thought was directed toward Olivia.

# **Chapter 1 – Alzer Commonwealth**

## **Part 1**

Einhorn is approaching Alzer Commonwealth.

The land is coming into view. But the hazy silhouette of the large tree that can be seen from afar stood out even more than that.

It's so big I'm wondering if perhaps there is something wrong with my eyes.

「It's not actually something like the ground is the one that is small isn't it?」

In respond to my words, Luxion replied coldly too today.

『It's a large country. There's no way that's the case.』

「That's just too big. It'll be easier to believe if I'm told it's a mountain.」

This is a world where grounds are floating.

I won't get surprised by most things but, as expected I'm startled seeing how big the sacred tree is.

「Even so, we finally arrive at Alzer Commonwealth.」

『It was a relaxing cruise. Is master alright with language learning?』

「If it's just for daily conversation.」

I learned it in class but, it will be a different matter to actually practice it.

I studied in the ship but, there is still a lot of part where my understanding is shoddy.

Let's learn the part where I'm lacking at the actual place.

『Then, I will translate the lacking part.』

『You can do that!?』

『Yes.』

『Then say it from the start. I wasted time studying so seriously like that.』

『The studying became a good way to kill time for a lazy person like master.』

Certainly it became a good way to kill time during these several days before we arrive at the commonwealth.

Well, if we hurried we would be able to arrive in one day, but the kingdom had sent notice to the commonwealth around what time I would arrive.

It would also become a problem if we arrive too quickly.

I'm looking at the commonwealth from the deck.

『Now then, I wonder how is the situation there right now.』

Is the main character able to get along well with the conquest targets without problem?]

Luxion looked up.

Then, Einhorn got covered with shadow.

『Is it a cloud?』

When I looked up, I can see the belly of an airship there.

「Coming from right above on an airship? What kind of idiot is riding there?」

Normally it's a breach of manner to pass from right above like this.

Luxion informed me that they are coming this way.

『They are introducing themselves as guards from the commonwealth. They're approaching us. Should I shot them down?』

「Stop it. Even so, that's really rude for them approaching from above like this.」

『—They are telling us to let them inspecting the ship with a very haughty attitude.』

Haughty attitude?

.

## **Part 2**

Marie and others were gathered in Einhorn's dining hall.

Kyle and Cara were talking to Marie.

「Goshujin-sama, we finally arrives.」

「The latest airship is amazing. It can arrive until the commonwealth this fast.」

It was the airship that Luxion constructed.

Its basic capability was different from this world's airship from the start.

「Yeah. Well, we arrived just as scheduled so there is no problem.」

And then, if there was a problem—it was with Julius and others.

When Marie turned her gaze toward them, they were relieved that they finally arrived in the commonwealth.

「Even this rare chance to have a cruise with Marie has gone to waste.」

「It's really unforgivable.」

Julius wanted to have fun in this trip. Even Jilk agreed with him.

(You guys aren't in the position that can play around!)

They had caused problems repeatedly in the kingdom.

Because of that they were half forcibly sent to study abroad like this.

Greg stretched.

「I have enough of cleaning. It feels like I have cleaned a lifetime's worth.」

Marie was annoyed by his words.

(No, don't be lazy with just cleaning! You've just been cleaning for several days, what do you mean by a lifetime's worth!)

They were formerly young masters of major nobles.

Something like cleaning was beneath them.

Chris talked to Brad.

「I was unable to train sufficiently for these several days.」

「I was also unable to practice magic. Besides, I also wished I could review my language study before entering the commonwealth.」

They had good upbringing. Naturally they were also taught the language of the commonwealth.

Marie was envious of that.

(Even though I was desperately studying with Kyle and Cara!)

Leon did the tactful thing and only gave light work to Marie and others.

They used up all their time other than cleaning for studying the commonwealth's language.

(I forgot it but, these guys are really the scions of noble families.)

They displayed just how different they were from her, but she wasn't envying them because of their unfortunate personality.

Julius smiled toward Marie.

「But, we will be liberated from this poor environment now that we've arrived at the commonwealth. Marie, let's take back our time together at the commonwealth.」

Expression vanished from Marie's face.

(Poor? Eh, wait a second. I was—really happy though.)

They got proper meals and bed just by doing a bit of work.

She was also able to secure time for studying. She was able to enjoy the cruise using their break time.

Marie was also able to have a peace of mind because Leon was here, so she didn't feel any inconvenience.

—The problem was only these five.

「Marie-san, let's enjoy our life in the commonwealth.」

Jilk smiled at her. It made Marie's cheeks convulsed.

(Where will you get the money to have fun huh!)

The kingdom only prepared the minimum budget for Marie and co who had caused problems.

They couldn't live in luxury at their situation.

Greg also looked joyful.

「I'm looking forward to it. Come to think of it, I heard there are also several dungeons in Alzer. It might be nice to have adventure with everyone there.」

Marie immediately wanted to earn money after hearing that there were dungeons.

Chris agreed with Greg's opinion.

「I once heard that you can find a lot of magic stones in Alzer's dungeons. I can't wait.」

Marie was wondering just what these five were expecting from this study abroad, but now the stock of these two were starting to rise high inside Marie.

(Greg, Chris—I've always believed in you two. Let's earn a lot of money.)

They had no money to have fun or the like.

There would be dungeons, so she wanted to give her all to earn money.

But, Brad's next words made her remembered one thing.

「I wonder? The academy is it? I heard that they aren't teaching about being adventurer there. I was told that they are treating adventurer like a mere laborer in Alzer.」

(Now that he mentioned it, it was like that in the game. But, we have no money so I want to make a killing in a dungeon at least once and put them into saving.)

The origin of Alzer Commonwealth was different from the kingdom.

Because of that, the adventurer job was looked down here.

Adventurer was laborer that brought out magic stones. That kind of perception was strong here.

Einhorn slightly shook while they were talking in the dining hall.

Kyle looked outside.

「What was that? This is the first time this ship shook like that.」

Cara was at Marie's side.

「Marie-sama, perhaps there is an accident?」

But, Marie who knew about Luxion's capability approached the window calmly.

「There is no way something like that happened. Besides, it was just a little shake—ohm an airship is approaching here.」

An airship was coming alongside Einhorn.

Julius stood beside Marie to look outside the window too.

「—This is the commonwealth's baptism.」

「Baptism?」

「It's a famous story. Alzer is getting large profit from exporting magic stones. At the same time they are boasting matchless strength in defensive battle. They continued to win and become haughty from that.」

The soldiers of Alzer were entering the ship one after another.

.

## **Part 3**

Einhorn's hangar.

A captain in his middle age wearing military uniform came into there.

He is wearing medals in excessive amount on his chest.

But, there isn't any dignity from him.

His stomach is really big and round. His military uniform looks like it's going to burst anytime.

He is walking while smoking cigarette. The ashes are falling on the floor.

「It's not permitted to smoke here you know?」

I warned him gently, but the captain sent me a ridiculing smile.

「Are you saying that I might cause fire here? Good grief, don't compare an officer of Alzer like me with you guys.」

They called it an inspection but they boarded Einhorn and did nothing but quibbling.

They strutted around acting like they are far superior.

The subordinate walking behind the captain talked to me with a humble attitude.

「I'm sorry. It will end soon so please bear with it.」

「—Bear with it eh.」

He looked kind at first, but he looked the same with the captain with how he is forcing me to bear with this.

He doesn't look like he has any intention to correct this attitude.

And then, when they arrived in front of Arroganz—the captain extinguished the cigarette by pressing it on its frame.

「Oi!」

The subordinate talked soothingly when I yelled.

「It will end soon.」

It's irritating.

He is acting humble, but his smile is flippant like he is making fun of us.

The captain is speaking ill while looking at Arroganz.

「What a misshapen armor. It has no sense. Is the kingdom making this kind of armor? They're putting a lot trouble for this kind of inferior good huh.」

—Rather than me, I'm more worried with Luxion. Won't he get angry hearing this kind of conversation?

Even though that guy looked calm, he is someone who will quickly say 『Extermination for the new mankind!』 .

He might get angry and sink the commonwealth.

—Let's warn him later.

「This airship has nice appearance but it's actually not a big deal. In addition the crews got cold feet facing the commonwealth's inspection and won't come out. Pathetic. It seems the kingdom is coward.」

Annoying bunch.

But, I bear with it because I can't just say that this ship don't need any crew.

I muttered in my heart, I can turn the like of you into ash anytime. Let's calm down with that.

That's right, as someone who possess a cheat like Luxion, I cannot use that power recklessly.

After all I'm an adult who is capable of patience.

The captain left while I'm thinking that.

「A worthless ship. We're leaving.」

「Yes sir! —Ah, please don't mind it. Alzer Commonwealth is warmly welcoming all of you foreign students.」

The subordinate said that before following behind the captain.

Shameless fellow.

I looked at Arroganz inside the hangar.

Arroganz was broken from the battle against Fanoss House.

Partner was also the same.

But, the armor here is a replica, and Partner is also in the middle of repair right now. Or that's the pretense.

「—If I have to say my impression of Alzer, to put it mildly they're the worst.」

He don't want to come to this kind of country if it's not the stage of the second game.

Luxion descended from the ceiling.

『Master, permission to attack?』

「Attacking the ship that came for inspection? I also want to attack but no.」

『No, it'll be enough if master order me to sink down the commonwealth.』

「What do you mean by enough huh. Stop it. Absolutely stop it. I'm serious here.」

—See, as I thought he is thinking horrible thing.

Even though here I'm only thinking of grasping the weakness of that captain and his subordinate to threaten them as my payback at best.

「Even so, the commonwealth is a really horrible country.」

『They're taking advantage of the sacred tree's blessing. Although, there is no doubt that their national strength is above the kingdom.』

「—Marie has mentioned that.」

『But, it's really unnatural.』

「If I'm allowed to speak my mind, this world is already full of unnatural things from the start. Grounds are floating, then there is a tree that is bigger than mountain, all of them are strange already.」

I complained. Then Luxion said 『Indeed. Well, I will investigate it from here on』 and cut the talk there.

「Good grief—to decide the fate of the world with romance between man and woman or with love, what an absurd world.」

I earnestly prayed that the study abroad this time will end without any problems.

.

## **Part 4**

The port of Alzer Commonwealth.

It was built at the edge of the land.

To make a comparison with my previous life, it's like a port that is constructed at the coast.

But, because the land in this world is floating in the sky, there is no boundary between land and sea here.

Many airships are coming and going from the airport all the time.

「It took a long time even after we entered the commonwealth.」

I complained while going down the ramp. I ascertained the sensation of ground under my feet after so long.

Marie is holding her travel bag with both hands. She is going down the ramp while running out of breath.

「We were flying between lands to reach here. That felt strange somehow. Aa~, I'm tired.」

One land acted like a cornerstone that connected six lands.

This land was once the territory of the great noble that produced the sacred tree's priestess, the Lespinasse House. Now it is under the management of the assembly of the six great nobles that were previously seven great nobles.

We flew between two floating islands to finally arrive at this center of Alzer Commonwealth.

Kyle and Cara also got down bringing their luggage.

「The count's luggage is really few.」

「I'm jealous how male don't need so much luggage.」

My luggage is only a single bag.

The two are jealous seeing that.

「My luggage? No, Luxion will carry it for me, so I'm only bringing the minimum necessity with me.」

I'm bringing with me daily necessities and various other things, but most of my luggage consisted of tea set.

I told Luxion to carry it with care.

Marie put down her luggage and complained at Luxion.

「Say that from the start!」

『I wasn't asked, so I didn't answer. That's all.』

「You aren't thoughtful at all.」

『Perhaps so. And, what about it?』

「Eh, no—it's nothing.」

Marie was bewildered by Luxion's response.

But even his treatment toward Marie that's like this is still in the category of kind for him.

Because if it's Julius or others who is complaining to him, he will show a blatant dislike toward them.

The five idiots got down from Einhorn bringing large bags with them.

I guess those are their own luggage, but it seems there are a lot of it. After they put down the bags, they got into the ship again to bring out the rest.

『Master, our reception came.』

Hearing that I moved my gaze. There I saw the officials of Hohlfahrt Kingdom waiting for us.

The officials are wearing suit. They are the diplomats staying in Alzer Commonwealth.

They are terribly bewildered seeing Julius and others carrying down their luggage.

.

## **Part 5**

The embassy is located near the port.

There are also the embassies of other countries. There are many foreigners here.

There are also restaurants offering the cooking of Hohlfahrt Kingdom around the embassy.

Foreign cultures can be felt here but, even so it felt like they are stuffing all the embassies into one crammed place.

A restaurant like a Chinese restaurant for the common mass is lined up beside a high class restaurant that offered food like French food.

And then there are people from various foreign countries here.

How should I say it, all of them are being forcefully packed into here.

I looked outside the window from inside the carriage while talking with a diplomat.

「There are many countries placing their embassy here.」

「That's because Alzer Commonwealth is a country that is exporting magic stones. Many countries are placing their embassy here. There you can see the embassy of Rachelle Holy Kingdom. I don't recommend you getting too close to it.」

Rachelle Holy Kingdom is a neighboring country of Hohlfahrt Kingdom.

At the other side of the holy kingdom is Mylene-san's home—her homeland. The holy kingdom is sandwiched between this country and the kingdom.

Its territory is smaller than Hohlfahrt Kingdom, but it's still a large country.

Mylene-san married into Hohlfahrt Kingdom as countermeasure against the holy kingdom. She became a bridge to build friendship between the two countries.

「There is friction even here?」

Both countries are hostile to each other.

I wondered if a dispute happened even here, but the diplomat shrugged.

「They are annoying bunch but, it's the commonwealth that is troublesome for the countries that are putting embassy here. What do you think about the guards' attitude?」

「—It's the worst.」

「That's because this is a powerful country that is never defeated in defensive battle. They became haughty. And most importantly, they are profiting from the magic stones export. Their nature is abundant and they are earning money even without doing anything. They're really enviable.」

From what I've seen from the land of the commonwealth until now, they also have abundant nature and their agriculture is prosperous too.

They have energy resource, and in addition their lands are in good condition.

From a ruler's perspective, this is a territory that they'll desperately desire.

The diplomat is expressing his envy.

「Recently they're also putting effort into their industry. They're showing off the difference in potential to us.」

「A country that has their hands on energy resource is powerful after all.」

「It's good that you understand count. Please don't cause any conflict with such a country. No, please be really careful okay?」

The diplomat is looking somewhat uneasy. It's really an unexpected misunderstanding so I talked to clear it up.

「Please don't talk like I'll pick a fight with anyone.」

「I can't believe those words when it came from you count who had a duel with his highness Julius.」

「It was those guys who—」

The carriage arrived in the house where I will live just when I'm getting agitated.

I just noticed that the carriage of Marie and others isn't anywhere near.

I got down from the carriage and looked around.

The place seems to be an affluent neighborhood.

There are small estates with gardens attached lining up.

There is no doubt that it's a large house.

It has three floors with a small garden attached, but its distance with the surrounding estates is close.

「A single house?」

「Yes. Originally we should prepare a mansion, but this study abroad was decided so suddenly so we didn't have enough time for preparation.」

From a slight distance away I can hear the bell of tram and the sound of tram running on rail.

The diplomat explained.

It seems he is thinking that I don't know about the source of those sounds.

「The sounds just now came from an object that looks like small boat running on ground. Airship cannot fly without permission on the sky around here. So they prepare a strange vehicle instead.」

「Setting that aside, where are Marie and others?」

「—That's, starting from his highness Julius, all of them are members of noted noble houses. A bigger mansion has been prepared for them.」

「Eh, so I'm the only odd man out?」

If there is a big mansion prepared, they can just clear a room there for me to live. It'll be easier that way.

While I'm thinking that, the diplomat scratched his cheek awkwardly.

「A, about that, it's because Marie-dono is a famous person in the kingdom. We will be troubled in case something happen.」

In that instant I guessed what is the diplomat worried about.

He must be worried that I might get seduced by Marie too.

I can't explain my relationship with Marie, and I also can understand why he would feel worried.

And above all else, it would be bad for me to live together in the same mansion with her.

I'm someone with fiancée. It'll be completely out of line for me to live together with other woman.

「Yep, I get it. It's no good if I live in the same building with those guys.」

「Thank you for your understanding. Also—I'm very sorry but, we are unable to arrange for any servant here.」

Apparently the officials at the commonwealth are unable to finish the preparation in time because the study abroad was decided out of nowhere.

Well, this can't be helped.

「Don't worry about it. I was the one who decided to study abroad so suddenly. You can prioritize Julius and others over me.」

「Thank you for your consideration.」

The official said that tomorrow there will be a guide coming here to show me around this area before I entered into the house.

When I reached the entrance, I looked up to the house where I will be staying for a while.

「—Now then, I wonder if the main character of the second game is managing to seduce man without any problem.」

『What a horrible wording.』

Luxion showed up from the luggage and immediately talked to me.

Having an AI like this who doesn't treat his master like a master as my partner, I really don't have any luck.

## **Part 6**

The academy that was in the middle of spring break was quiet.

The classes were divided based on the academic year. It was assumed that each classroom would be used by around thirty people.

If the academy in Hohlfahrt had an atmosphere similar to a university, the academy was closer to a high school.

Both nobles and commoners could enroll into the academy. This academy had an atmosphere that was more open than the academy in the kingdom.

A young man and a girl wearing uniform were walking inside the academy building that was quieter than usual.

One of them was a normal looking young man.

He was a commoner and didn't have a family name. His name was Jean.

He was a second year student with medium build. He had excellent grades and also popular.

That Jean was looking and talking at the girl with a troubled face.

「It's troubling even if I'm suddenly told to look after the overseas students. It seems they are nobles with really high status, won't it make them angry if someone like me is assigned to them?」

Jean was getting less and less confident. But the girl slapped his back and spoke with a really clear voice.

The girl tied her blonde hair into a side ponytail. That blonde hair's color was turning into pink color the closer it was to the tip.

She had a slender body and long arms and legs. It was like she was a model.

Her amber eyes were kind but strong. She was giving off the vibe of a tomboy.

From her tone one could sense her easygoing personality.

「Don't be so timid. You are our representative, so be more confident. If they're acting high and mighty, punch them in their face.」

「The other party is a prince you know!?」

「You should have that much backbone at least. Besides, even the other party is shouldering their country you know? They won't do anything stupid. —Unlike our side.」

The girl's look turned serious. Jean was troubled of how to react.

「E, err—」

The girl sensed that and laughed.

「You are a man, so be more confident and give it your all.」

The girl said that and clapped his back repeatedly. Her name was Noelle Beltre.

She was girl from a ruined knight house—that was the background she was set up with.

Noelle placed her hands inside her uniform's pockets. She felt slightly strange seeing the corridor that was usually noisy when it was break time to be completely silent like this.

(Overseas students from the kingdom huh—well, I wish they'll be more proper than our nobles.)

Noelle didn't hold a good feeling toward the nobles of the commonwealth.

「Err~, Noelle-san will also become their caretaker though? Don't go wild like usual okay?」

Jean looked worried. In respond Noelle opened her eyes wide in surprise.

「Eh? You really can't trust me that much?」

「I can't trust you Noelle, after all you won't step back even when facing noble. It's not good to be so belligerent.」

Noelle touched her hair to hide her embarrassment from getting warned like that because of her usual behavior.

(I know that already. But—it's the other side that is making trouble with me.)

Jean was genuinely worried for Noelle.

「This year there is also a lot of people connected with the six great nobles. There are also a lot of people in possession of strong “divine protection”.」

「Yes yes, I get it. —I won't make any trouble.」

Divine protection.

That was a special power that was bestowed to those who were recognized by the sacred tree.

Because the six great nobles possessed such great power, they could rule over the commonwealth without worry.

They dared to give education to the commoners also because they possessed the great power that was the sacred tree's divine protection.

Even if the commoners revolted after obtaining knowledge, the six great nobles and their relatives had nothing to fear from them.

That was just how absolute the power that the commonwealth's noble possessed.

Noelle and Jean were walking in the corridor. Then they came across some girls going down the stairs.

The central figure of the group—the leader was a third year girl. Her purple eyes turned toward Noelle.

There was a smile on her lips, but it didn't reach her eyes.

She had fluffy yellow blond hair. It grew until around her shoulder blade. Coupled with her glamorous body, it made her overflowing with adult charm.

Noelle too had normal sized chest but, this girl's size was more than that.

Louise Sara Rault was behaving amiably until just now, but a cold smile formed on her face when she saw Noelle.

「Oh, I never thought I will come across you even when it's spring break.」

The girls who seemed to be her hangers-on moved to behind Louise even while looking bewildered.

Louise folded her arms under her chest, in contrast Noelle kept her hands inside her pockets while replying.

「—We are just getting called by teacher.」

「Noelle-san!？」

Jean was flustered by Noelle's attitude that showed no timidity even when facing a noble. Louise ignored him and chuckled while hiding her mouth.

「Have you perhaps done another mischief?」

「Haa? Why are you speaking like I've done anything bad? There will be overseas students coming, so the teacher is asking us to show them around. That's all. Don't pick a quarrel with me every single time.」

Louise Sara Rault—she was the eldest daughter of Rault House, one of the six great nobles.

Rault House was serving as the assembly chairman after Lespinasse House fell into ruin.

Louise's standing was like the princess of the six great nobles.

In addition, there was a fated connection between Rault House and Noelle's family.

Noelle and Jean tried to leave, but Louise stood in their way. She brought her face closer and casually grabbed Noelle's side ponytail.

「—You're really annoying.」

Jean couldn't do anything in front of a member of the six great nobles.

But Noelle disregarded such thing and slapped away Louise's hand from her.

「Quit it. Don't get too cocky just because you are a senior.」

Louise stepped away from Noelle and shrugged. Then she left with her hangers-on in tow.

「My, how scary. —Even though it's you who is getting cocky.」

After Louise left a sharp parting remark and left with her hangers-on, Jean stroked his chest feeling like his life had been cut short.

「Noelle-san, to think that you picked a fight with the princess of the great nobles just after we had a talk about it.」

Jean looked like he was going to cry. Noelle scratched her head while apologizing.

「My bad. I'll be careful next time.」

「—I pray that there won't be a next time.」

Noelle started walking again with Jean who had half given up. Then Noelle talked smilingly to Jean to sweep away the heavy atmosphere just now.

「Hey, rather than that—」

Before she could finish speaking, this time a second year young man was walking toward the two of them with large stride.

That young man had amber eyes like Noelle.

His peculiar trait was his medium length pointy red hair.

It was clear he was a handsome man from a glance, but his gaze was really sharp.

The young man then addressed the two with an angry manner.

「You two, since when you became close like this?」

His body was trained. He was also tall with nice build.

But, his expression was mad with jealousy.

Jean who was being looked down by the young man was flustered and he was unable to reply well.

「Ah, no, that—」

Noelle replied in Jean's place.

「We are chosen as caretakers for the foreign students. Right now we have just returned from the staff room after receiving the explanation for that role.」

The young man didn't lessen his glare at all even after receiving that explanation.

「Is that true?」

Noelle was irritated by the young man's doubting words.

「—Why do I have to justify myself to you huh? Jean, let's go.」

「Noelle-san!? That person is—」

「I don't care!」

Noelle led Jean away, but then the young man raised his voice toward her.

「Noelle! I'm not going to give up! You are—you are my woman!」

「Don't decide as you please!」

His name was Loic Leta Barrière—he was also someone related to the six great nobles.

Furthermore, he was the heir of Barrière House.

Noelle looked back toward Loic and stuck out her tongue.

「Give up already, idi~ot」

Jean covered his face with both hands seeing Noelle doing that.

# **Chapter 2 - Academy**

.

## **Part 1**

It was the new academic term if the academy.

I woke up early in the morning and sat on the bed while talking to Luxion.

「How are you doing with that side?」

Luxion has been gathering information since arriving in Alzer.

First is the search for the main character.

Fortunately, we are able to identify the conquest targets.

The young man who is the main conquest target is the red haired Loic Leta Barriere.

According to Marie, the conquest targets of the second game have deep peculiarity.

Even though I think that Julius and others also already have deep peculiarity, the conquest targets of this time are even more than that. Scary.

Loic is the heir of Barriere House. It seems he is a character that can get closer with the main character easily.

This guy is the one with the highest possibility.

『How about master wash your face first?』

Luxion told me to dress myself first. I rubbed my eyes sleepily while refusing.

「I'm really curious here, so tell me already.」

『It can't be helped. Then, let me say my conclusion first—I am still unable to identify the main character.』

「Haa?」

I let out an astounded voice. Luxion then started making excuse.

『In the first place, the academy was in spring break until yesterday. It was a bad period for investigating human relations within the academy. Also, there was a problem.』

「Problem?」

I put my hands through my uniform and buttoned it while asking what's the problem. Then Luxion gave me an answer that I never expected.

『I searched the students with the surname Beltre just as Marie's information indicated. I found nearly ten students with that surname and then I attempted to identify them.』

「Eh, you already went that far? Then you must have found her right away then? She is a girl with twintails and easygoing personality.」

『—The girls I identified are twins that don't exist in the information. I can't specify which one of them is the main character. Because of that I need to ask for confirmation from master and Marie.』

「—Eh?」

I never heard anything about the main character being a twin.

## Part 2

On the other hand around that time.

The mansion where Marie and others were living in was hectic.

The mansion that was prepared for Julius and others was spacious whether it was the building or the garden.

The entrance was also wide. It was a mansion of a noble just like Marie dreamed of.

But, reality was merciless.

They were lacking in manpower to manage such large mansion.

「I already said it right!? I said it right!? It will be a new term from today, so prepare everything beforehand, that was what I said!」

Julius and others were struggling with their uniform with flurried movement.

Julius tilted his head at Marie.

「No, I intended to prepare, but the uniform wasn't prepared.」

Jilk also nodded.

「I thought that there would be someone who prepared the uniform for us.」

Marie was at her wits' end.

「We don't have a single servant here! You can only prepare everything by yourself!」

Kyle and Cara were preparing the uniforms of the five dawdling men.

Greg accepted his shirt and changed into while saying.

「There is Kyle here.」

Kyle whose name was mentioned was already sweating since the morning.

「Are you an idiot? Do you think I can prepare the meal for eight person as well taking care of everything else by myself?」

Kyle was ironing clothes while saying that. Being told that caused Greg to snap.

「What!」

Brad calmed down the angry Greg.

He was wearing his trouser and checking his sleeves.

「Don't get angry from the morning. More importantly, the length of these sleeves isn't to my liking. Cara-san, remake it for me.」

Cara who was busy with sorting everyone's uniforms burst into tears.

「Please bear with it for today.」

「No, I can't. I'm a type who can't rest easy if my sleeve's length isn't fitting like this. Please do it quickly.」

Receiving that request, Cara looked alternately at the mountain of uniforms in front of her and the clock.

She looked toward Marie and said 「Marie-sama, we won't make it in time」 with tears streaming down.

Marie knocked Brad's head and warned him 「We're going to be late! Endure with it for today!」 , but problems kept coming up one after another.

Chris who had already worn his uniform got bored and took a wooden sword.

「I'll work out for a bit.」

Marie stopped him from doing that.

「Stoooooppp! You're going to get sweaty. We're going to depart soon, so endure it for a bit more!」

The mansion of Marie and others was noisy from the morning.

Marie thought.

(It's really busy since we're coming here!)

The cause of this situation was the instruction of Hohlfahrt Kingdom's queen, Mylene.

She intentionally ordered to reduce the number of servants so they could taste hardships.

Because of that Marie couldn't focus on just her study. She also had to think about their daily life.

Originally she should work together with Julius and others so they could support themselves but—.

「By the way, will we make it in time to the opening ceremony?」

—Julius was only looking at the watch without any care in the world.

Marie yelled.

「AAAAAAAAAAAAAA!!」

(YOU GUYS HELP OUT TOOOOO!!)

Marie's voice echoed through the mansion.

## Part 3

The academy of Alzer Commonwealth.

I am sitting on a sofa in the reception room. I checked the time with my pocket watch.

This room, the furnishings are pointlessly extravagant.

It showed off just how rich Alzer Commonwealth is.

I'm waiting for Marie's group who haven't come even when it was already time. Fifteen minutes has already passed.

The teacher who was keeping me company had some business and left the room.

「Coming late right from the first day. Those guys are really astonishing.」

Luxion is blending into the surrounding beside me so that his figure cannot be seen. He started projecting an image into empty air.

It seems he is gathering information even now through the drones that are scattered all over the academy.

As for Marie's group, there is an image of them rushing to the academy.

『Apparently they were slacking with their preparation a day before.』

「Even though there is a lot of things I want to talk about beforehand.」

Right now I don't have any information about the second game.

I was unable to judge which of the information that Luxion gathered was the correct one.

「In the end we still don't know which of them is the main character.」

『The previous information mentioned that she has twintails, but both of them styled their hair into side tail.』

「I was surprised that they are twins, but even before that the hair style information is also wrong that we can't decide who is the main character. Why are both of them wearing side tail. One of them should wear twintails.」

Was it because the main character with twintails became two so their hair style also became side tail?

Their face is also the same because they are twin.

But, according to Luxion's investigation, there is difference in personality between the two of them.

The one named Noelle is a lively girl. She tends to move around energetically.

While the one named Lelia feels like a normal girl.

From what I saw in the information, their hair color is slightly different.

After that, it only left their breast size I guess.

Noelle is bigger. I think she is around C cup?

「I guess we can at least differentiate them by looking at their hair color and breast.」

『That's the worst way to differentiate someone.』

「Or rather, is pink really the real color of their hair? Another world is amazing.」

『We got diverted from the topic.』

Luxion suddenly turned quiet in the middle of our tedious talk.

The image projections around us vanished. That must mean that someone is approaching.

I straightened my posture. The teacher entered inside together with a young man and a girl at that timing.

「Sorry to have made you wait. The remaining foreign students have also arrived, so you will be shown to your classroom after this. Also, these two will be your guide within this academy.」

One of them is a plain young man who looked kind.

「I'm Jean. Please don't hesitate to ask me if there is anything you want to know.」

But, the problem is the girl.

「Nice to meet you.」

The two are talking fluently in the kingdom's language.

The young man looked earnest, but the girl was talking in an informal way.

What is more troubling than that is that the girl is the main character candidate.

Noelle Beltre—the candid looking girl is standing in front of me smilingly.

「Do, do you not understand my words?」

「I don't think there is any problem with our wording though?」

I waved my hand and talked in the kingdom's language jokingly.

「No, I'm just surprised because you two are speaking really fluently.  
I'm Leon.」

I made a harmless and inoffensive greeting while feeling bewildered from the sudden entrance of the main character candidate.

—I never thought I would suddenly meet her like this.

.

## **Part 4**

I didn't participate in the opening ceremony—or rather, I didn't make it in time.

I gave my greeting in my class but, it's quite a lonely start.

We the foreign students are separated into two people per class.

The academy in the kingdom was similar like a university, but the academy here reminds me of my high school period.

Even the classroom's structure was a familiar structure like in the elementary school until high school of my previous life.

Though it was obvious that they would be similar seeing that the game was modeled after Japan's school.

Even the tables and chairs are similar with the ones used in my previous life's school.

There is difference in some details, but I'm feeling strange when I'm sitting on my seat wearing a uniform.

Thanks to that the flashy hair colors of the students around me like red or blue also looks odd to me.

I'm staring in a daze at the classroom that is mixing nostalgia and oddness together.

The girl sitting in front of me turned around toward me.

—It's Noelle.

「Hey, is it true you're a knight already in your age?」

It seems she is curious at a foreign student like me.

She couldn't be called ladylike. Noelle was a lively girl who showed interest to anything.

Putting it another way, she had no calmness.

「It's true.」

I answered shortly, but it's not like it's because I'm disliking her.

I'm still not used talking in the commonwealth's language.

Also, in case the girl in front of me is actually the main character, it won't be good if I get too deeply involved with her.

According to Marie, apparently there was an event in that otome game where foreign students from the kingdom came here.

If you have the clear data of the first game, Julius and co would come to study abroad here.

But, only one person would come. It wouldn't be at the scale like right now where the five idiots plus three more people enrolled here.

「You're amazing Bartfalt. And you're also a heir of a house of count?」

It seems she doesn't think that I have a peerage at my age.

「No, I'm a count. I'm what you called an upstart.」

「Can you become a count even at that age if you raised an achievement? The kingdom is amazing.」

About the reason Noelle is talking to me like this, other than interest she is also sympathizing with me.

After all—.

「Brad-sama, please tell us more!」

「No fair. Please talk with us too!」

「Um, what is the type of girl that Brad-sama like?」

Brad too didn't seem to dislike the attention. He was dealing with the girls happily.

In the first place Brad is a narcissist.

He is unbearably happy to hear the voices praising him.

「My type? It's a small and frail girl. Actually I have a fiancée. My bad but, I can't answer the feeling of you girls.」

The girls raised shrill voices hearing that.

「Brad-sama, you have a fiancée? What's more you're devoted to her, how wonderful!」

—The girls inside the classroom are surrounding Brad.

Brad is a handsome man as long as he doesn't open his mouth. The mood feels like there is an idol inside the classroom.

Noelle made a troubled smile seeing that.

The boys are sending Brad gazes that are filled with jealousy. They won't talk with me.

In other words, I'm—completely becoming a background character which is befitting of a mob.

「Aa~, about that—sorry. Everyone is getting excited.」

「Don't mind it. It was also like this in my previous academy.」

I didn't particularly feel disappointed but, Noelle talked to me due to her concern.

She looks like a strong-willed girl, but it seems she also have kindness with it.

Perhaps it's just to be expected from the main character candidate?

Now then, I should gather information too.

「By the way, does Noelle-san has a sister?」

「I have. Actually I'm a twin. I have a little sister.」

Noelle talked about her little sister happily.

「She isn't crude like me, should I call her ladylike and know how to goes with the flow? She is smart, and also a reliable little sister. Also, too bad but she has a lover, so don't hit on her okay?」

「—Hee, that's unfortunate. What about Noelle-san?」

I too have two beautiful and nice fiancées! I almost said that, but I swallowed my words back.

It's a bit hard to declare that I have two fiancées. Also, I'll also be troubled if she bites at that topic so keeping it quiet should be the best.

「You can call me without honorific. As for me, because of my coarseness too I'm free right now. Also, there is this troublesome fellow who keeps picking a fight with me, so no boy will approach me. I'm taking application for boyfriend right now.」

She was a girl who was fun to talk with.

Also, the two phrases she mentioned, 「troublesome fellow picking a fight」 and 「free right now」 are bothering me.

Her little sister has a lover, but at this time there is no decisive factor to single out which of them is the main character.

Is the one with higher possibility the little sister?

And then, one more thing.

「Troublesome fellow?」

「I don't think Bartfalt will get it even if I told you but, it's the princess of Rault House. She is often picking a fight with me, it's bothersome.」

The last boss's family name came out.

Besides, a princess picking a fight with her?

「—You can also call me Leon without honorific you know?」

I'm more concerned with who is the main character rather than the shrill voices from Brad's surrounding.

.

## Part 5

Behind the school building.

That place was dim because the building blocked the sunlight. It was a bit cold there.

But, it was convenient because no one would go there.

I called Marie after school and we tried narrowing down the main character from the information gathered until now but—Marie is complaining in her tired state.

「I told them. Prepare properly the day before okay, I said. And yet, I was scolded like it was my fault. Why? I didn't do anything wrong!」

An opening ceremony was taking place today. After that students could go home.

The sun is also still high in the sky. It's afternoon right now.

There is one big difference from this academy compared to the kingdom's academy. This academy has no boarding system.

Because of that, the number of people in the academy drastically decreased when school is over.

「Enough complaining, for now tell me which one is the main character.」

「I already mentioned her characteristic before.」

「—For now, look at this.」

Marie looked at the images Luxion projected at empty air.

Then her eyes opened wide and she held her head.

「What do you mean twins!? I never heard anything like this!!」

「That's why I'm troubled here. Anyway, there is no doubt that one of them must be the main character. Based on the personality I got the feeling that Noelle is more likely to be the main character but, it's Lelia who has a lover right now.」

I tried asking various things from her, but I couldn't decide it myself.

Marie pondered while looking at the two's photos.

「I never imagined that the hair style will be different, and in the first place the main character also didn't really show up in the illustrations so I don't know. —Ah, wait! If I remember right she tied her hair to one side in the illustration when she wore a dress.」

Luxion expressed his personal opinion.

『Unlike the game, in reality someone can change something like hairstyle as they please if they feel like it.』

Then, the hairstyle isn't a problem?

Even though I've decided to quickly find the main character and focused in being a love cupid, I never thought that we will stumble at this kind of place.

「The little sister Lelia has a lover, but is it not strange to go out already with a conquest target in this phase?」

I never played the second game, so I don't know at which point the lover relationship got formed.

Marie put her hand on her mouth.

「That phase is around the middle of second year I think? But, if you got close with one, there would also be events where your

surrounding will mention such thing—eh? Was it from a different game?」

Marie was relying on her vague memory to recall that otome game's sequel.

「If I remember right, there was an uproar and a duel happened. The one who protect the main character there will become her lover. If there are multiple candidates, the player will choose from them I think?」

「A duel again.」

There was also a duel in the first game.

Is having a man fighting for her sake a situation that will make female player happy?

「Is there no photo of the boyfriend?」

When Marie said that, Luxion immediately replayed a video.

『This happened thirty minutes ago.』

A girl who looks similar with Noelle appeared in the video.

—It's Lelia.

The color of her hair is pinker than Noelle. It's straight without any curl. This girl also has strong-willed look, but she looked like she is even more strong-willed than Noelle.

There is also a man in the video. He has blue hair.

His silky blue hair grew until his shoulder.

He has green eyes, and I guess his height is somewhat shorter than normal? He is slender and give an unreliable feeling, but he is a kind looking boy.

Marie immediately guessed the boy's name right.

「Emile! It's safe tile Emile!」

「—What's with that unpleasant nickname?」

His name is Emile Laz Pleven.

It seems he is the second son of Pleven House of the six great nobles.

He is one of the conquest targets. According to Marie, he got attached with the awful nickname of "safe tile Emile".

「He is a character who is easy to conquer. Even if you blundered in the game to some degree and couldn't get a boyfriend, you can clear the game if you choose Emile at the middle stage.」

I looked at the two in the video.

The conversation of the two inside the video can be heard.

『Lelia, about the holiday next week, that—do, do you want to go to a date?』

Emile invited Lelia to a date with a red face. It was an innocent and warming scene.

Lelia was the one who seemed to be used to this kind of scene.

『Alright. But, enough with the art museum tour. I'll like it better if we're going shopping next.』

『Eh, art museum is no good?』

『—The date before this and even the one before that were all art museum tour weren't they? Let's do a different date sometimes.』

『Ye, yes. You're right.』

Marie was listening attentively to that conversation.

I asked her.

「Somehow I'm the one feeling embarrassed watching that. And, is Lelia the main character as expected?」

Marie nodded with a serious expression.

「Perhaps. This conversation, I think I've seen it in an event. Emile is a conquest target. I think this development is a bit early but I think in a game the main character can also become this close with him at this time.」

It seems she can't remember the detail but, she said that this kind of conversation should actually happen in the game too.

Luxion turned off the projection.

『Then, is Lelia the main character?』

Marie folded her arms.

「I completely thought it would be the royal road Loic, but it's unexpected that she aimed at Emile.」 (TN: Royal road in Japanese can also mean the common or usual choice)

Royal road Loic.

But, the main character Lelia's choice was the safe tile Emile.

「From where I stand the main character look more like a normal girl than I thought. If it's just from their atmosphere then I think it's Noelle who is more like a main character.」

There are a lot of differences between them even though they are twins.

「Is that so? But, if she is going out with Emile, then Lelia is the main character. It will be perfect if she is also in quarrel with the villainess.」

—Villainess? Does she mean someone like Ange in the first game?

「So there is also a villainess in the second game.」

「She isn't just her love rival. She is also the daughter of Rault House that the main character is in enmity with. This woman is a year older and will pick a fight with the main character persistently.」

「—Oi, wait a second.」

「What?」

I recalled Noelle's words.

Noelle mentioned that the princess of Rault House was picking a fight with her.

「About that villainess, it seems she is picking a fight with Noelle.」

Noelle didn't say that the woman is picking a fight with her and also her sister.

Marie frowned and then she held her head at her wits' end.

「—I don't get it anymore.」

Just what is going on?

Luxion advised us.

『We concluded that the source of the main character's power is the priestess's bloodline. In this case, it's possible that both of them are "existence that can become main character".』

Marie lifted her face.

『Ri, right! The main character is a survivor of Lespinasse House. She had the bloodline of the priestess. That's why, it won't be strange no matter who become the main character among them!..』

『Did the role get split after they became twin? Like, one of them has a boyfriend while the other one get targeted by the villainess.』

『—I don't know.』

Marie threw in the towel, but I'm also the same.

We just don't know.

But—this is also isn't the worst case.

『Either way, it doesn't change the fact that we need to investigate.』

『Yes. I will continue investigating.』

In the end, we didn't understand which of them is the main character.

However, it's also a fact that this isn't a hopeless situation.

.

## Part 6

Inside the academy building after school was over.

Brad was surrounded by girls.

「Brad-sama, we have special classroom in this building.」

「It also has a music room.」

「There is also a kitchen used for home economics here. Female students would make sweets there. Please eat the cake I make later.」

Because the female students volunteered to show Brad around, they are giving him a tour inside the building while surrounding him like this.

Brad also didn't look that dissatisfied with the situation.

「Thank you.」

The academy's female students blushed from Brad's smile.

There was a group of male students watching that scene.

They were sitting on the stairs with their uniforms worn a bit disorderly. They were the delinquents of this academy.

The young man who was their leader had blood vein bulging on his forehead.

He had curly purple hair and purple eyes.

Brad had the same hair color with him, but seeing him having girls fawning over him made the young man irritated.

However, this young man wasn't handsome like Brad.

His body was thin and the color of his skin was unhealthy.

There was a half emptied wine bottle near him.

His name was Pierre Io Faiviel.

The second son of Faiviel House of the six great nobles.

He wasn't the heir, but he had hangers-on around him because he was a member of the six great nobles.

Everyone—had a crest on the back of their right hand.

The crest wasn't tattoo or birthmark.

It was the proof that they received the divine protection of the sacred tree.

And then, even among them Pierre possessed a crest that was only bestowed to someone from the six great nobles.

For the people of the commonwealth, the crest was also a proof of nobility.

「Why are they fawning on a noble from a third rate country?」

The hangers-on were breaking into cold sweat seeing Pierre irritated. They hurriedly pacified him.

「They aren't anyone that Pierre-san should pay attention to.」

「That's right. The girls around him are all commoner. They are only fitting for the noble of Hohlfahrt.」

「He isn't any match for Pierre-san.」

They flattered him. Pierre took the wine bottle and gulped it down.

And then he wiped the spilled wine with his uniform's sleeve before raising the corner of his mouth in an eerie smile.

「It has been a long time since we last played.」

「Pierre-san want to play, with the girls just now?」

「That'll be fun too, but it'll be enjoyable to torment those Hohlfahrt bunch too. If they got angry and started a war with us, then I'll be able to raise achievements too.」

It was a statement that made light of war.

But, this way of thinking wasn't limited to just Pierre.

「Great idea. Please let me participate too when the time comes.」

「I'm asking you too, Pierre-san. I want to raise achievements and get myself some prestige.」

「Me too!」

The hangers-on said that and grinned.

They weren't that shocked even when hearing that it might become war with the kingdom.

Rather, they had the attitude of wishing eagerly for it even.

Their attitude was like they completely believed there was no way they would lose, but the cause of that confidence lay in the crest on the back of their right hand.

Pierre stared at his crest.

「Just wait you guys. Look forward to it. Now then, first—those guys got caretakers right?」

First they would target not the overseas students from the kingdom but from the people around them.

「It's also going to be amusing to knock them around bit by bit and see which one of them snap first.」

Pierre with his twisted personality set his target on the overseas students from the kingdom.

.

## **Part 7**

The twin sisters Noelle and Lelia were living in a normal apartment.

It wasn't too far away from the academy. It was clean and spacious enough that the two of them could live there without problem.

It was the former retainers of Lespinasse House who prepared the apartment for them.

They were supporting the two from the shadow even now.

The apartment of these two girls of marriageable age was a room with white base color.

The place was kept clean. Right now Noelle was cooking in the kitchen wearing apron.

Lelia returned home while she was humming and cooking.

「I'm home.」

It was a curt voice. Noelle replied back energetically.

「Welcome home~. Wait a bit more for the dinner.」

「—Right」

Unlike the big sister Noelle, Lelia's attitude was really cold.

Noelle was worried at Lelia who seemed to be tired.

「What's wrong?」

「—Big sis, you were chosen as caretaker for the overseas students weren't you?」

「Yeah. It's because you refused to do it.」

Noelle was confused why Lelia mentioned this topic.

Lelia's expression was strange, so she turned off the fire and put her hands on her waist.

「Is there anything strange from the overseas students?」

「Anything strange? They're pretty strange but, all of them are really popular. Don't you also know how the girls are making a ruckus about them?」

「I know about that. What's bothering me is—the boy who doesn't really stand out, and the remaining two girls.」

Leon's face immediately came to mind when Noelle heard Lelia mentioning a boy who doesn't really stand out.

「You mean Leon? Now that you mentioned it, he was showing interest when I talked about you. Though he looked disappointed when I said you have a boyfriend.」

Noelle said that with a laugh, but Lelia wasn't smiling at all.

Noelle got concerned with her little sister who wasn't like usual.

「What's wrong?」

「—It's nothing.」

Lelia said that and entered her room.

# **Chapter 3 – Twins**

.

## **Part 1**

At the academy of Hohlfahrt Kingdom.

It was the start of a new term. Ange was swarmed with work at this time.

The number of students in her grade had decreased after the war with the principality.

There were many nobles whose title was stripped from them. The reasons why were varied. Betrayal, sitting on the fence, and so on.

The academy had also abolished the system of exclusive servant for the students. Because of those reasons, it felt like there weren't many people inside of the academy.

In such situation, Ange's standing in the academy was high.

Today too, she was in a conversation with an upperclassman regarding a matter inside the academy.

Ange was talking with Clarice inside a classroom that Leon often used for tea party in the past.

「Female students' discontent?」

「That's right. Until now they have exclusive servant to attend to their need. Their servant would wake them up at the morning and help them to dress themselves. But, they're suddenly forbidden to have exclusive servant now. There are a lot of girls who can't arrive

on time now. Not only that, many of them are also unable to dress themselves.]

Ange closed her eyes in exasperation when she heard that.

「The palace also intend to educate the girls harshly using this chance. They can just withdraw from the academy if they're feeling that discontent.】

「The problem is we also can't do that.】

Clarice traced the rim of her cup with her finger.

「Nevertheless, I'm missing Leon-kun's tea.】

「—What do you mean by that?】

Ange glared at Clarice. In respond Clarice replied ambiguously to give Ange the slip.

「Who knows? I wonder what those words might mean. More importantly, has any letter come from Leon-kun?】

Ange slightly blushed when Clarice asked her whether there was any letter from Leon.

「U, umu. There is. It was from several days ago. It seems he is doing his best there.】

「He is really diligent isn't he?】

Clarice found it unexpected that Leon didn't forget to write. She then changed the topic again.

「Angelica, the girls are problematic, but the problem in regard to the boys is also increasing.】

「The boys too?】

「It seems they can't really come to a grip with the situation. Many of them are bewildered because the girls suddenly changed their attitude.」

The treatment to the boys should be in improvement, but there were still some discontents from them.

Angelica tried asking what kind of discontent they had.

「I didn't hear anything about that though?」

「That's because you are Leon-kun's fiancée. He is really popular with some of the males. Because of that they don't want to make trouble for you.」

Leon was popular among the academy's male population because they were able to get away from the absurd marriage situation thanks to him.

He was especially popular among the destitute nobles from the countryside like Daniel and Raymond.

They would complain a lot about Leon, but at the inside they felt indebted to him.

But, it wasn't limited to the male students of the academy—apparently Leon was also popular among the men outside the academy.

「They are like his fans. I think there are even some of them who are in love with him for real.」

Hearing that unpleasant information made Ange frowned.

「That made me get a mixed feeling. I'm happy that Leon is accepted but, that guy has no interest in that direction.」

Clarice smiled hearing that.

「That's good.」

Ange sent a sharp gaze when she heard Clarice saying that.

「What do you mean by that?」

「Hmm, I wonder what do you mean?」

Ange wondered how many times she had repeated this question. She couldn't help but feel that Clarice hadn't given up on Leon.

Setting aside the joke, Ange let her gaze dropped toward the inside of her cup.

(In any case, discontents are accumulating among both males and females because of the drastic change right now. This is a bit troublesome.)

Ange brought her cup to her lips. It just as Clarice said, she missed the tea that Leon made.

The next moment Clarice's eyes turned serious.

「Ah, I almost forgot. The increase in the number of the scholarship students also caused a lot of trouble. Please remind Olivia-san to be very careful too in regard to this.」

「Troubles with the scholarship students huh.」

The academy had been a place of learning for nobles until now. And yet now people from merchant or adventurer background—commoners with exceptional capability could enroll.

Naturally troubles also occurred because of that.

「There are a lot of students who picked a fight with the scholarship students.」

The environment rapidly changed after the war against the principality. Because of various reasons, even the academy was experiencing troubles.

(What a very troublesome situation. I hope it can calm down before Leon comes home.)

.

## Part 2

I was spending my days studying in the academy as an oversea student.

This place was different from the kingdom, even so I felt somewhat nostalgic seeing the scenery in the classroom.

It made me recalled my high school days.

I was listening to the teacher's lecture in the commonwealth language while also paying attention to the report from Luxion in my ear.

『Master, I have investigated all the young men in the capture target category except two of them.』

I tapped on my notebook once using my pen to signal Luxion to continue its report.

It should look like I'm taking the class seriously to my surrounding.

『In Marie's information, it was mentioned that there is a hidden character outside the academy. I'm still in the middle of investigating that person right now. As for the capture target within the academy who I still cannot investigate, it's the heir of Rault House.』

Apparently the son of the last boss was also one of the capture targets.

The heroine's relationship was a really complex one.

However, Rault House's heir was an adopted child, so perhaps it wasn't that much of a problem.

Rault House also had a daughter. It seemed that person was the villainess of the second game.

But still, to think that the heir of that Rault House was one of the heroine's capture targets.

He was in a really complicated position it made me felt pity for him.

After all his adopted father and big sister would automatically turn into his enemy if he became the heroine's lover.

『There is also a slightly troublesome information.』

I didn't want to listen to any bad news, but I also couldn't ignore it if there was a trouble.

While I was thinking so, the teacher, Mr. Clement turned toward me.

『Do you understand what I have been explaining so far?』

He was a good teacher who acted considerately toward me and Brad.

『—I understand.』

『I, I don't have any problem, Mister Clement.』

He was a gentle-mannered and kind teacher but—.

『Good. Leon-kun and Brad-kun, don't hesitate to ask me anytime if there is something that you don't understand.』

—Mr. Clement winked at me. I felt guilty to feel like this toward him but, that wink made me shivered.

He had a large build that was covered with a shirt so tight they looked like they would burst.

His chest filled his shirt to the bursting that its shape could be seen clearly. His had a long chin with crevice in the middle and a thick moustache.

He shaved his hair. It made my face turned white.

Yes, Mr. Clement was—a muscular man.

And yet he was talking effeminately like a woman.

The bell chimed at that time. Mr. Clement closed his textbook.

「That's it for today. Remember to review the lesson at home. Don't forget to prepare for the next lesson too. Or else, I'm going to punish the bad child who forget.」

Mr. Clement threw a kiss toward the class. The boys screamed

「Hih!」 in response.

He was our homeroom teacher. He was a really good teacher other than his appearance.

—If only he didn't have that kind of appearance.

.

## **Part 3**

The class had ended. When the break time came, Noelle who was sitting in front of me turned around.

She sat while hugging the chair's back and looked at my notebook.



Nevertheless, to sit with her legs opened like that—I didn't think it was appropriate for a girl.

It felt like her panty would come into view if she just moved a bit more, but in the end it was still barely safe.

「Your note is easier to understand than mine.」

I guessed she wanted to ask me if I managed to follow the lesson alright, but unfortunately my note was quite complete, thanks in part to Luxion.

「You're already a great help just from helping me with the parts that I missed.」

Noelle would help me when there were words that I didn't understand or a sentence that I misheard. She was very helpful.

Noelle's confidence returned when I told her that.

「I guess I did well as your caretaker then.」

I glanced at Brad's direction.

He didn't look like he needed Noelle's help with so many girls around him.

That guy was a real world noble young master, so he was better in foreign language than me.

He had learned not only the commonwealth's language, but even other foreign languages.

Such competent man actually got tricked by Marie. It made me sad when thinking that.

Then Noelle asked my plan for today.

「Hey, I'm going to show Marie and Cara around outside the academy today. How about you also come with us Leon?」

Noelle was basically the caretaker for the female foreign students.

It would be better if Marie and Cara were also placed in the same class with her. But because our coming here was decided so suddenly, the academy staffs couldn't prepare everything perfectly.

I guessed we got placed on Noelle's class was also the effect of that rushed preparation.

「I'm going to ask Jean to show me around today so I'll take a rain check.」

「That's too bad.」

Noelle would talk what was in her mind without hesitation. She was a lively girl with easygoing personality.

Certainly I found her easy to get along with after talking with her like this.

「Even though I planned to ask you to hold our things on the way home.」

She also frankly spoke her real intention.

「You're really honest.」

「Did you think I'm inviting you to a date? Too bad. Even though I'm like this but I'm not an easy woman.」

The way she carried herself didn't give people the impression that she was a guarded girl though.

But her guard was actually hard?

But—I'd rather she let her guard down more and got a boyfriend. That way would make me rest easier.

「I thought that you must have a boyfriend with how cute you are. Isn't there any boy that you're close with?」

Noelle's expression turned cloudy.

「I think my close male friend might be just Jean? Our houses are close with each other, and recently we got a lot more chance to talk.」

—Our other caretaker Jean? But he shouldn't be one of the capture targets.

She mentioned that they were close. Did that mean they still weren't going out?

「I want a boyfriend but—having one will also bring another trouble.」

「Another trouble? Is it a different trouble form the princess of Rault House that you mentioned the other day?」

「Yep. And the trouble came from a prince this time.」

A prince?

There was one thing that I learned after coming to the commonwealth.

Each of the six great nobles was a king who ruled their respective floating island.

Those six kings gathered under the sacred tree and ruled the country called the commonwealth together.

Because of that, the middle name of each six great nobles was different.

What a troublesome setting.

「It's this guy called Loic. He would get heated up on his own and won't listen to me. I really don't like him. He is telling everyone that he's my boyfriend, but I absolutely won't accept him. —Even though he was a good guy before this」

Noelle got dejected. I watched her face while breaking into cold sweat.

—By Loic, did she mean the one who was treated as the main target even among the capture targets?

Eh, Noelle actually hated him?

「He is telling everyone he's your boyfriend?」

「Don't take it seriously. It's just his lie.」

I wanted to ask her about it a bit more, but the teacher entered the classroom at that timing.

.

## Part 4

Somewhere hidden inside the academy.

I met with Marie and we talked about everything that happened so far.

It was noon, so I bought a bread from the academy's store before coming here. I was eating it while talking with Marie.

I and Marie were currently in confusion because of this situation.

「Noelle likes Jean. On the other hand Loic likes her and making advance on her, but she isn't interested in him?」

Marie leaned forward and groaned while she held her head with her hands.

「That's what I said. She mentioned how she is close with Jean. Their houses are close to each other and they often talked. Ah, I heard that they sometimes also shared food if they got leftovers. They got such relationship ongoing.」

What nice developments. I was jealous.

Surely Jean's position was like a light novel's main character.

A mob who got an otome game's heroine falling in love with him. That sounds similar with the trope of a self-proclaimed normal high school student had a super beautiful girl falling in love with him.

Noelle too, she looked like a gal but she was actually a girl with wholesome attitude.

Well, when compared to the girls of the kingdom, she could still be categorized as graceful even counting her somewhat delinquent behavior.

The students in Alzer Commonwealth's academy—especially the girls were too normal that it reminded me of the school in my past life.

All of them looked like very wonderful girl to me.

It would be perfect if only the higher-ups of the commonwealth weren't asshole.

Marie was at a complete loss.

「The little sister Lelia is close with the safe tile, while Noelle is being pursued by Loic—but, the villainess is targeting Noelle—」

Her eyes were looking whirly due to the confusion she was feeling. Marie scratched her head roughly that it messed up her hair.

「—I DON'T GET ITTTTT! I DON'T KNOW WHO IS THE HEROINE HEREEEEE!」

I started eating my second bread when Luxion floated to my side.

It had just returned after gathering information, so I listened to its report.

『About Lelia and Emile's relationship, even the people around them are recognizing them as lovers.』

「The second son of a great noble is allowed to have a commoner as his lover?」

Luxion moved the ring inside its red lens to show affirmation.

『They thought of it as him playing around while he is still a student. Perhaps they consider her as his mistress in the future?』

Marie added to the explanation.

「But it had serious atmosphere in the game. Later on the situation will change because the heroine gets chosen as the priestess of the sapling. They're going to be able to be in relationship with each other formally and at the end it will be happy end with the two of them getting married.」

「I see, so this priestess position is like being a “saint” in the kingdom.」

The heroine of the first game Livia originally would be recognized as the saint and so she would be allowed to marry with the crown prince Julius or with the other noble heirs.

Luxion made a suggestion to me.

『Master, in this case I think it will be safer if Noelle also become a lover of one of the capture targets just in case.』

「—But it doesn't look like Noelle is interested. Hmm, who are the other capture targets again?」

Marie started counting with her fingers.

「There is the royal road Loic, the safe tile Emile—」

She mentioned the names in succession.

「"The useless teacher" Narcisse and "the brocon" Hugues. There is also the hidden character "the Onii-chan" Fernand. The last one is—"the bitter enemy" Serge.」

The four of them are also from the six great nobles.

Still, are those nicknames necessary?

「What's with that "Onii-chan" nickname?」

「That's because he is Hugues's big brother. He is the current head of Druille House at such young age and he is also participating in the meeting between the six great nobles.」

Luxion nodded.

『He is a big shot. Right now I'm lacking manpower to collect more information about Fernand.』

「How did the heroine encounter the hidden character then?」

「The heroine can meet him if she get closer with Hugues. He is a handsome young man with strong sense of justice! —I wish I can jump ship to him right now.」

Hearing Marie's real feeling exasperated me. At the same time I considered who Noelle should enter a romantic relationship with.

「Perhaps it'll be better if Narcisse or Hugues become Noelle's lover. It's also hard to discard Fernand as a choice but, we simply don't have any information on him.」

At present, Serge who wasn't in the academy and Loic who was hated by Noelle were out of the question.

Marie looked doubtful at my suggestion.

「A teacher and his student having relationship in reality might be problematic. If we are going to assist the heroine to get a boyfriend, how about Hugues? But, Hugues is a third year, so that'll be difficult too. —Ah」

「What's wrong?」

Marie seemed to notice something—perhaps she suddenly recalled about the detail of that otome game a little.

「No—that—in the game, if you didn't trigger Hugues's flag in the first year, his route would be closed in the second year.」

「Closed?」

「If you didn't start approaching him from the first year, you wouldn't be able to enter Hugues's route! Ah wait. I think Narcisse's route also have a condition. If my memory is right, you needed to choose the class that Narcisse is teaching.」

The optional special lesson.

Apparently Narcisse was also a scholar who often entered dungeons to investigate the ancient ruins.

I turned my gaze to Luxion.

『Both Noelle and Leila didn't select Narcisse's class. Narcisse's class is unpopular that there is practically no student who chose to take his class.』

Apparently the students chose the optional classes at the start of the academic year.

「The second year! There is still the second year. The flag can still be triggered even if you chose his class starting from the second year!」

Marie said that it was still alright, but Luxion turned its single eye side to side.

『Unfortunately, both Noelle and Lelia opted to select other special class.』

Marie's expression paled.

「—Eh, wait a second. If that's the case, the only remaining capture target is only Loic.」

And Noelle hated that Loic.

「Checkmate?」

Just as I said that, Marie looked down and covered her face with both her hands.

「Why would Noelle hate Loic!? He is a bit scary sometimes, but he is handsome and rich! He will be the head of a great noble house in the future, he is absolutely a fine catch!」

No, as a game player of course it would be only obvious to target him knowing that he was one of the capture targets. But in reality you normally wouldn't target that kind of person who was so far above your station.

「We still aren't sure that Noelle is the heroine but, this situation isn't really good.」

Game and reality were different.

There was still a chance to turn around the situation starting from now but—we didn't know if it would really bring happiness for Noelle by doing that.

While I was worrying about it, I noticed Marie's gaze was focused at my hand.

She was wiping her drool while her eyes were fixed on my half-eaten bread.

「Y-you aren't skipping meal aren't you?」

Marie wiped her tears.

「Everyone is at that age where they have hearty appetite. Also we are just barely scraping by with our living expenses. I only had a single bread roll for lunch as a way of saving money.」

Even I was eating sweet breads for my meal, and yet this girl only had a single bread roll?

「What if you made box lunch from home?」

「Then I'd have to cook for the share of Julius and others too! Everyone will surely ask me to cook for them too. Cooking for the share of seven people is going to be a massive chore!」

「O, ou. —Do, do you want this?」

When I offered Marie my half-eaten bread, she happily accepted it.

In my past life, this situation would be like a high school girl happily accepting a half-eaten bread.

「Waa~i! I love you big bro!」

Normally this was where I would tell her 「Stop it, that's disgusting」, but this girl was just too pitiful that I couldn't summon the motivation for that.

Luxion was also watching Marie with pity somewhere in its gaze.

『So this is the fate of someone who aimed to have a reverse harem.』

My heart felt pain watching Marie eating the bread in delight.

This sight made me doubted whether you could become happy even if you managed to win the heart of a capture target.

.

## Part 5

「Am I, close with Noelle-san?」

I was helping out Jean with carrying teaching materials. I asked him about his relationship with Noelle under the guise of making a small talk.

We were walking in a corridor. There were a lot of other students around us.

「Yeah. I heard that you two even shared foods with each other?」

Jean looked slightly embarrassed.

「Well, yeah.」

「I'm jealous. You manage to get along well with a beautiful girl in the neighborhood. It's like you're a main character in a story.」

「It was just a coincident but, various things happened the first time we met that helped us getting along with each other.」

First time they met?

I got curious and tried asking Jean. It seemed Jean was keeping a dog.

He brought his dog from his hometown until here.

「Actually I don't have any family.」

「The story suddenly got heavy.」

「Ah, no, err—the dog I'm keeping is an important family for me. And, that dog's name is Noelle. She is already so old that for a dog she is like a grandma.」

Apparently Jean had started keeping the dog since he was born.  
Right now the dog was seventeen years old.

It was a really advanced age for a dog.

「I won't be able to meet her for the second time if I left her behind.  
Because of that I brought her here, but then I found out Noelle has  
the same name. We got acquainted with each other from that.」

It seemed like his pet dog became the connection that brought them  
talking with each other.

「—She is very good to me.」

Jean looked happy. It made me feel miserable that I even considered  
separating the two of them.

If possible, I wished the two of them would keep getting along well  
with each other.

.

## **Part 6**

I had left the academy and right now I was on my way home.

I headed to the terminal for the tram and found Noelle there.

The surrounding scenery reminded me of Meiji era and Taisho Era that I saw in the photo of my past life, and yet the getup of the students gave me the impression of outfit from Heisei era or Reiwa era. (TN: Meiji=1816-1912, Taisho=1912-1926, Heisei=1989-2019, Reiwa=2019-present)

But, I didn't feel strange or uncomfortable anymore after I got used to such discrepancy.

Other than tram and horse carriages, there were also cars running on the street. Those cars had the appearance of really old type car in my past life.

「Ah, Leon. Over here.」

Noelle waved her and at me with a smile. I walked toward her and stood at her side to wait until the tram arrived. There were more than ten other students around us. They were talking with their respective friends.

A tram arrived at the opposite side of the railway track. Students boarded into it.

「This tram is really convenient.」

In addition you only needed to pay the same price no matter where you got down. It was great.

「Is that so? I don't really get how you feel. But, I get the feeling that you are more used to this kind of vehicle then the other overseas students.」

Noelle got a sharp instinct.

She was the type of person whose body would move first before her brain. She somehow sensed that I was different from Julius and others.

Well, I was familiar with this kind of vehicle and had even ride in them from my past life.

「The thing is simpler than an airship, so it's also easy to get used to it.」

「You have your own airship? As I thought a count is different.」

「Amazing right? Want to have a ride sometimes?」

The reason I tried inviting her because I wanted to ask Noelle about many more things.

But, it seemed she was wary toward my offer.

「Are you hitting on me?」

「I'm telling you that's not it. I just want to get along better with you.」

「Ee~, even though I would be happier if you were actually hitting on me.」

She spoke with a disappointed tone, and yet she still refused my invitation gently.

「But too bad. Though you might not expect it I'm actually busy. Maybe another time.」

From the way she carried herself she looked like an easygoing and approachable girl, and yet she unexpectedly got a solid guard.

It felt like I was trying to breach a wall.

I was unable to know her too deeply even though it felt like she was approachable.

Or perhaps she was refusing because she already had Jean?

After that we continued our talk as usual, but Noelle's expression suddenly changed.

「What's wrong?」

「—It's the troublesome girl I mentioned before.」

A voice called out from behind.

「Oh, are you perhaps approaching a new man this time? You're really a sinful woman aren't you Noelle? Just how many men are you planning to lay your hands on?」

Noelle stepped in front of the girl who came from behind as though to cover me from her.

「Louise, just why are you here? Someone rich like you should just go home right away with your car.」

「I told them to wait for me, so you don't need to worry.」

「Go home!」

When I turned around, I saw a female student there.

The people around us were watching awkwardly.

—So this is the second game's villainess.

The villainess opened her mouth to address me too but—

「You should be careful too. Getting involved with this girl won't be—」

—Her eyes widened when she caught sight of me and her mouth suddenly stopped moving.

Was the face I was making that horrible?

I touched my face to check, but then the tram came at that timing so Noelle grabbed my arm.

「Leon, we're going.」

「Ri, right」

When the villainess heard my name, she muttered something.

「Leon—she said」

We boarded the tram. Outside the villainess—Louise-san kept her eyes fixed at our way.

She chased the tram that started moving, but she immediately stopped and stood still on that spot—even so she didn't avert her gaze from us.

「—What?」

I got the feeling she was looking at me rather than Noel.

It seemed Noelle also noticed that.

「Was it love at first sight? It was the first time I saw Louise looking like that.」

「I wonder if Louise-san's type is someone like me?」

She was a beautiful girl. If I didn't have fiancées then I might try hitting on her.

Well, let's stop with the joke—the way she was shocked like that, it wasn't the look of someone who fell in love at the first sight.

Her face looked extremely surprised.

The inside of the tram was crowded with students. I and Noelle didn't sit down and grabbed at the handrail before continuing our talk.

「The person just now is the one who often pick a fight with you?」

「Yeah. She is a third year named Louise. She is really troublesome because she's also the daughter of the council chairman.」

「Is she bothering Lelia-san too?」

Noelle shook her head in negative at my question.

「Only me. Lelia has Emile with her, so even Louise won't make any trouble with her.」

「Emile huh.」

「He is the second son of Pleven House after all. Even Louise won't want to agitate him too much.」

Was it because they were fellow six great nobles?

However, the villainess should pick a fight with the main character no matter how close she was with a capture target. Getting in the way even if the heroine had an influential lover, that was the way a villainess should be.

Marie also said that, so this situation was a bit strange.

But, that girl's knowledge about the second game was also really incomplete.

Perhaps there was something that we didn't know about?

Noelle who was irritated because of Louise-san's appearance suddenly lifted up her face with a taken aback expression.

This girl's expression could change in the drop of hat.

「D-darn it!」

「What's wrong?」

「Today is a special sale day! Actually I planned to ask Lelia to go with me, I messed upp~」

Seeing Noelle dejected because of a special sale day, it reminded me that Marie too was mentioning 「Today is the special sale day!」 in high spirits earlier this day.

She mentioned something about bringing Cara and Kyle with her to buy a lot—those guys also had it hard.

There was nothing like supermarket here, but I had seen a shopping street where various stores like greengrocer or meat shop could be found close to each other.

Noelle kept sending me glances.

「—I get it. I'll help out.」

「Really!? Haha~, Leon is really kind.」

The main character of the second game—or at least its candidate that was overflowing with homeliness, Noelle. She placed her hand on my shoulder.

This feeling of distance between us was quiet close that it might make me misunderstand.

## Part 7

At night, I listened to the report from Luxion while eating dinner.

The plates floated from the kitchen and glided until the table in front of me.

Luxion was the one controlling the plates. It didn't look like science anymore but magic instead.

「This is an extravagant dinner for a dude living on his own.」

The aroma of grilled steak made me wanted to eat rice.

『Master must be glad to have me here.』

「Maybe.」

My curt reply made Luxion's mood worsened.

『—There is no need to hold back with the praise.』

「This is wonderful.」

Luxion muttered 『Good grief』 hearing me saying that in monotone before it made its report.

『Master, I have a report about the capture targets.』

「What is it?」

『In regard to Narcisse, although he is in charge of a special class, the lack of students taking his class is becoming a problem. This year the number of student taking his class is zero. It seems the class won't be hold anymore from next year.』

「So we completely missed the flag.」

Setting aside Lelia, if only Noelle would trigger that flag—such thing was on my mind, but then the matter of Jean surfaced inside my head.

『It's the same with Hugues. There is a talk of him getting engaged. The woman in question is Louise.』

That capture target named Hugues, he really had no luck to have an engagement with the villainess decided like that.

After all she was different from the villainess of the first game Ange. Based on what I heard, that girl genuinely got a mean personality.

「—Say, about that Louise-san, wasn't she surprised when she saw me?」

『Is master curious?』

「Her face looked really surprised that time. Also, isn't it strange that she is leaving Lelia alone?」

If the main character was the person that the villainess was picking on, then that meant Noelle was the main character.

But, it was Lelia who was getting intimate with a capture target.

『Should I investigate?』

I cut the steak with my knife while thinking of various things.

「—Luxion. Isn't there something wrong with us deciding who should be Noelle's lover like this?」

『Isn't that matter trivial compared with the safety of the world? Though in my opinion it won't be any problem at all even if the world of the new mankind is destroyed. That's my thought from the start.』

「Of course you are.」

As always, this guy really hated new mankind.

Just how long it would keep dragging around the matter of past war like this.

It was already over now.

I speared a meat piece with my fork and stared at it before bringing it to my mouth.

「If only Marie remember more of the game, it would be a great help.」

『Truly it's just as master say.』

# **Chapter 4 – Nobles of the Commonwealth**

.

## **Part 1**

At Hohlfahrt Kingdom.

Academy students were gathered inside a bar at the capital.

It was a welcoming party for the scholarship students.

It was a drinking party that Livia organized. It was held slightly late at night because it was hectic every day.

But even though Livia was the one organizing this party, she followed Leon's stance in not drinking alcohol.

Currently she was going around asking everyone how they were doing.

「Everyone, has you gotten used to the academy?」

Some boys who were wearing their uniform in a way that didn't follow the regulation were watching Livia.

Aaron who was originally an adventurer before becoming a student here had become close with the ill-bred male students who were similar with him.

They were a group of three male students including Aaron.

Their gazes were directed toward Livia.

「Aaron, Olivia won't drink any alcohol.」

「The plan to make her drunk and bringing her back into our room can't be used like this.」

The three were giving off disquieting air.

Aaron who was acting as their leader grinned and placed a small bottle on the table.

「It'll be easy if we use this thing. For now let's wait for a good timing where I can mix this into her drink.」

The three were scheming something.

But then, there was a voice that called out to the three of them from behind.

It was Creare who was blending into the environment.

『Bad~chil~dren~found~』

Creare let out a joyful voice while ejecting something with \*pshew\* sound from its round body.

A sweet aroma and a voice that didn't come from someone among them caused the three to look around warily.

「Whose voice it is just now? Also there is this strange—sweet—smell」

The three got sleepy and let go of their consciousness.

Seeing the three of them fell asleep on their table, Creare whispered.

『This is your own fault. This is what will happen if you try to lay your hand on Livia-chan. But don't worry—I'm not short tempered like Luxion, so I won't kill the three of you.』

Creare showed itself and looked around with its blue lens while forming a plan.

Then it discovered a promising group.

It was a group of academy students that consisted of only men. They came here for drinking.

They looked like they were having a lot of fun talking excitedly with their fellow male only.

『Aha!』

Creare formed a sinister design. It was then Livia worriedly approached the three who were asleep.

「You three, what's wrong!?」

Livia was panicked. There Creare advised her while also guiding her action.

『Livia-chan, it seems they are tired. I saw them drinking alcohol that was a bit too strong for them. They became sleepy because of that.』

「Are-chan? Why are you here?」

『I came to check the situation because I was worried for you. But more importantly, it will be better if we quickly bring back these three to the student dormitory.』

Livia started thinking then.

The welcoming party had only just started.

「Perhaps we should let them rest for a bit like this before bringing them to the student dormitory?」

『Ah, wait. —It looks like the students over there are going to return.』

Ahead of Creare's gaze was the group that consisted of only men.

They were holding each other's shoulder cheerfully.

They were about to leave the bar. There was almost no doubt that they were going to return home.

「Ca, can I ask them for help?」

『It will be fine. —They will readily agree to help. I guarantee it.』

「I'll feel bad to trouble them with this. Won't it be better to bring these three back by ourselves?」

『It's okay. Rather they will be happy to help out.』

「Re, really?」

Being told that, Livia approached the table where the group was making merry. But it caused that table's atmosphere to drastically changed from the fun atmosphere just now.

「E, excuse me.」

Among the young men there were even some who glared at Livia, but a young man with swept back black hair who seemed to be their representative talked to Livia with a smiling face that looked fake.

「Do you have any business with us?」

Livia nervously sent her gaze toward the table where Aaron and his friends were sleeping.

「A, actually, there are some students who got drunk and fell asleep. If everyone here is planning to return to the male dormitory right away, I'd like to ask for your help bringing them back.」

Livia thought that she was being a bother while listening to herself asking for help, even so she waited for their reply.

She readied herself to get scolded, but she saw the young men looked at each other and started discussing something. Then they suddenly smiled.

「What. You should tell us right away if it's for something like that.」

「I'm sorry. I was a bit hesitant to ask.」

「Those three? It's fine. We will take responsibility to send them back to the dorm.」

The young men whose attitude changed so drastically brought out Aaron and his friends from the bar with the leader himself personally carrying Aaron.

「Eh, wait. All of you are really fine with this? I know that it was me who asked for help but, it isn't a bother for everyone?」

Livia was bewildered by the kindness of the group. The leader turned a smile toward her with Aaron on his back.

「We don't mind. We will take responsibility to look after them.」

「Thank you very much!」

Livia expressed her gratitude. She muttered 「It's just like Are-chan said」 before returning back to the welcoming party in relieve.

Creare who was watching the happening with its blue lens looked toward Aaron and his friends who were carried away by the young men.

『The three of you are guilty. After all you tried to lay your hand of Livia-chan.』

Creare's lens let out an ominous glint. And then it vanished by melting into the scenery.

.

## **Part 2**

The next morning.

When Aaron opened his eyes, he found himself inside a room of the male dormitory.

But, it wasn't his own room.

The furniture was different, what's more there was another male student there. He seemed to be the room's owner.

He was preparing coffee.

The young man with swept back black hair was tall with well-trained physique.

He was wearing a white shirt that was unbuttoned around his chest.

「Do you want coffee?」

He asked Aaron. Aaron nodded in bewilderment.

「Y-yeah」

The room was illuminated by morning sunlight that was filtered from the window. It made that young man looked dazzling.

「You got drunk and fell asleep in the bar yesterday. I and my friends brought you guys back, but even when we asked the dorm staff we couldn't find where your room is. Sorry, because of that I let you sleep in my room.」

Aaron thanked the young man who looked after him.

「I-is that so? Sorry for all the troubles.」

「What, don't worry about it.」

Aaron was surprised by himself for saying thank you so honestly.

(I'm saying thanks to a man who looked after me? What's wrong with me?)

Normally he would grumble at this time, but today he couldn't bring himself to do so no matter what.

His uniform was neatly folded on the table near the bed.

He was bewildered because he was only wearing a single brief.

(Di, did he take off my clothes? Even so, my butt hurts.)

Aaron looked bothered by his rear. The young man apologized when he noticed that.

「Sorry. I dropped you when carrying you back. You suddenly struggled at that time, so it couldn't be helped.」

It seemed he was really drunk. Aaron fell into his thought.

(Did I drink that much? In the first place, when did I fall asleep? No, no good. I can't recall.)

He remembered until the part where he was planning to drug Livia.

But, it seemed that plan failed.

(E-even so, why am I this nervous in front of a man?)

Aaron was blushing in front of the upperclassman.

.

## **Part 3**

Creare was observing Aaron's situation.

『I just want to test about the phenomenon of human mistaking their heart's throbbing as love, but it looks like it's actually a success.』

Creare was having fun. It also checked the situation of the other two boys.

The two of them were still sleeping in other boys' rooms.

『I'm looking forward to their development from now.』

Creare was originally an AI of a research facility before it was reused for its current role. It was made to be more interested in things like experiment compared to AI like Luxion.

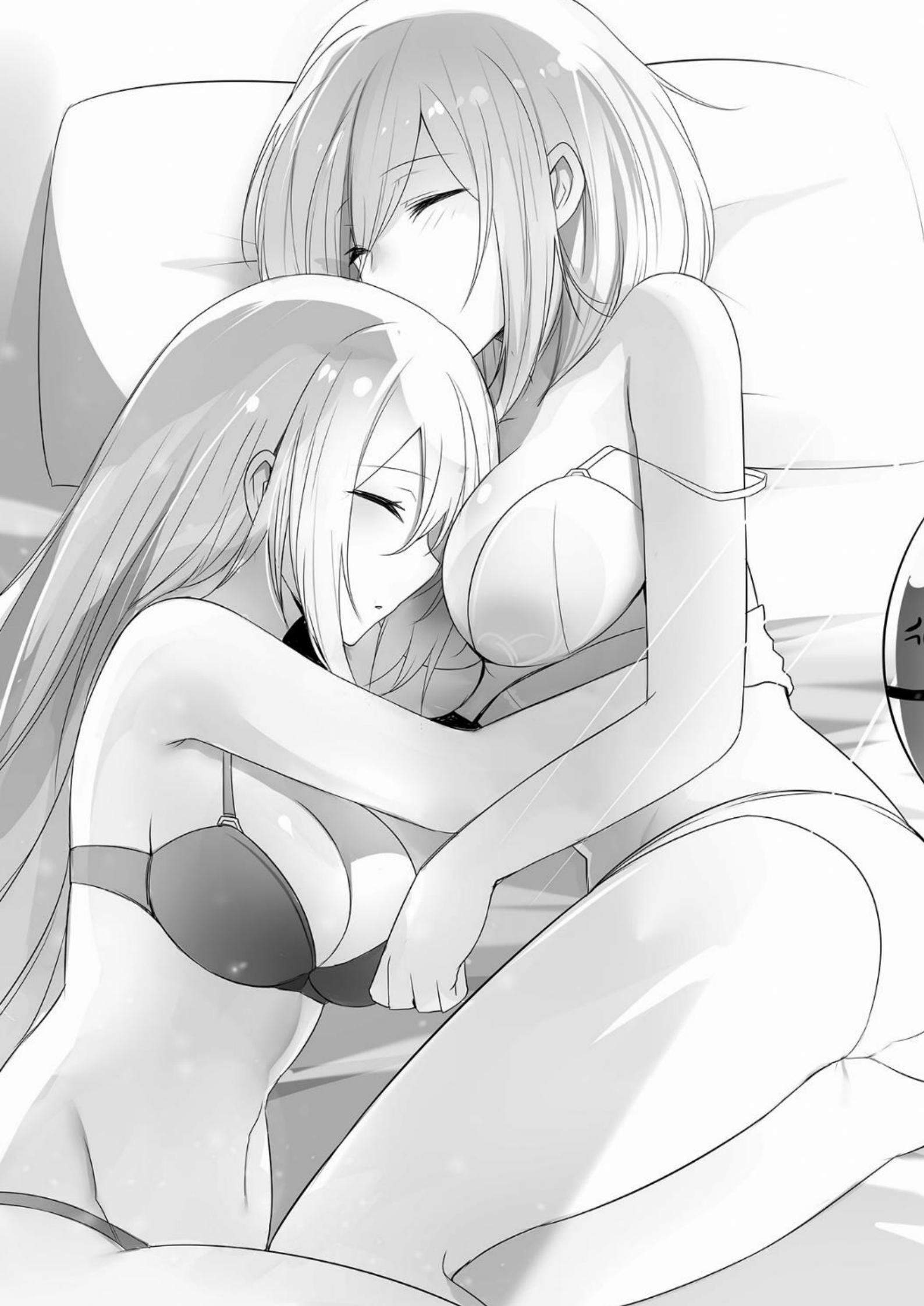
『I made this experiment because I was curious how human would act when they were tossed into a peculiar situation, but to think that the difference from old mankind would be this great. This is very interesting in a sense.』

It considered preparing aphrodisiac too for this experiment, but Creare judged that there was no need for that.

Then a rustling sound came from behind it.

It turned around and checked. IT seemed Ange and Livia who were sleeping in their underwear had just moved.

The two of them were sleeping together peacefully on one bed.



It seemed Ange woke up because of the voice of Creare talking to itself.

She sat up with a face that still looked sleepy.

『Oh, good morning. Listen to me Ange-chan! Actually—』

Ange turned toward Creare who was in high tension and threw a pillow almost unconsciously to shut it up.

Then she got back to sleep using Livia's breasts as pillow.

Creare took offense to that.

『Horrible! How can you do such horrible to me, the one who saved Livia-chan from danger. That's right! I'll send the photo of this sight to master today!』

It took picture of the two's defenseless figures for revenge.

『—Fufufu. This is your own fault because you angered me. Now then, I have to check the situation of Aaron-kun and his friends.』

Creare was operating behind the scenes while Leon was gone.

.

## Part 4

It was around the time when I had started to get used to the life here.

「It's tiring too today.」

I was heading to the tram terminal to get home from the academy. But then a car stopped in front of me.

The car looked like an expensive classical car.

The driver got down from the car and respectfully opened the door at the back.

「—Ha?」

I thought that he might have mistaken me for someone else, but then a girl got down from the back seat.

The students around us got noisy. Louise-san invited me while that was happening.

「I didn't introduce myself properly at that time. I am Louise Sara Rault. Overseas student Leon-kun, I have something to talk with you.」

I never thought even in my dream that the villainess would call out to me.

Why was she interested with me?

I was also curious why she was making that shocked face when we met before.

「A talk?」

「Yes, that's right. I'll be pleased if you can accompany me.」

I shrugged and entered the car just like she asked.

The inside of the car had very luxurious decoration.

The seat was also soft. This was really a car that the rich would have.

Louise-san sat also got in and sat beside me. Then the driver closed the door before entering and driving the car.

I didn't know if this car had the same structure like the car in my past life or if it only had the same appearance but different mechanism.

But, the car was moving normally.

Loiise-san talked to me with a nervous look while I was feeling nostalgic.

「Have you gotten used to Alzer?」

She broke the ice with a harmless and inoffensive question, but the real topic must be something else.

「Yes, thanks to everyone here.」

「You can talk to me if you have any trouble. I also won't mind even if you use my name.」

I got the feeling that I would be able to get away with a lot of things if I made use of the name of the young lady of Rault House.

Though I wouldn't use it because it was scary.

「That's really kind of you.」

「Oh, do you think that I would be someone meaner? Noelle must have said something to you.」

「Well, something like that.」

You were the very picture of a mean-spirited woman at our first meeting though.

「I'm not like that all the time.」

「It's not persuasive at all hearing that from the person herself.」

「You got quite the mouth in you.」

Louise-san looked like she was having fun to me. She wasn't anything like when she interacted with Noelle.

The driver glared at me through the back mirror when I talked casually with Lady Louise.

Look at the front when driving, oi.

「—And, what might be your business with me?」

Just as I tried to move to the main topic, Louise-san brought her face closer toward me.

「Eh?」

She touched my cheek with her left hand and stared on my face with moist eyes.



「W-what are you」

*I have fiancées!* I'm thinking to say that before jumping out of the car, but then Louise-san said something unexpected to me.

「Hey, try calling me "Onee-chan".」

「—Heh?」

My brain was imagining a beauty bringing her face closer and said 「I love you」 with moist eyes to me, but to think she would ask 「Call me Onee-chan」 instead.

As expected even I couldn't possibly predict this.

「N-no, I」

「You don't want to?」

Louise-san said that looking like a spoiled child but also with a slightly dejected expression. She looked cute.

Perhaps she was actually making fun of me?

「For me the word big sister is only associated with bad images, so that's why, I just can't bring myself to say it.」

「So you have a big sister.」

「She is a big sister who planted an explosive near her little brother though.」

I mentioned that with a laugh. Louise-san's eyes snapped wide open in shock hearing that.

「T-that's a very extreme big sister. B-but you were alright weren't you?」

「Yes, I got away alright.」

I recalled the duel with Julius and others before the summer vacation.

The bastard Jilk used my big sister to plant a bomb inside Arroganz in my duel against those guys.

Fortunately I got away unscathed, but a big sister who planted a bomb to kill her brother was a horrible big sister no matter how you cut it.

Well, it would also be too harsh to blame big sis if you considered her position at that time.

And I was unscathed anyway so I didn't hold any grudge toward her.

「Do you hate, your big sister?」

「I can't express my relationship with my sisters with simple word of like or hate. It's more like, I can't completely hate them no matter how hateful they are?」

「You're kind Leon-kun.」

I was happy to be told that by Louise-san, but couldn't something be done about this closeness.

She had backed away slightly, but the distance between us was still too close.

Our thigh touched each other, and when I realized my hand was in her grasp.

What's with this situation!?

The car was only going in circles around the academy. It didn't have any particular destination.

Did this mean she didn't intend to let me get away?

「—And, what is the reason you are asking me to call you Onee-chan? Is that your hobby?」

「It's not a hobby! I-it will take too long if I'm talking about it here. And I also don't know whether you will believe me or not.」

She claimed that it wasn't because of hobby that she asked me to call her Onee-chan.

However, what could be the reason then? It was curious.

Why did she want me to call her 「Onee-chan」 ?

「Rather, why me?」

「Tha, that's why, it's—」

Louise-san fidgeted in embarrassment. She averted her blushing face from me.

Her mouth was only mumbling vague words without showing any sign that she would tell me the reason.

Eh? This person, isn't she a bit cute?

A transmission from Luxion came right after I was thinking that.

『Master, I'm sorry to disturb you while you are having fun.』

I wanted to retort 「I ain't having fun here!」 right away, but Louise-san was also here.

Luxion ignored me and continued his report.

『A problem occurred in the academy.』

—Eh?

## **Part 5**

At the academy of Alzer Commonwealth.

Jean got asked for help by a teacher after school and he stayed late in the academy. Right now he was sorting items in a classroom.

「I wonder if Noelle is hungry right now?」

Jean was worried about his old dog.

He got out of the classroom that was starting to become dark with his bag in hand. But waiting for him there was male students who got countless bad rumors surrounding him. He was blocking the corridor so he couldn't pass through.

That male student also got his hangers-on around him.

「Eh, excuse me?」

Jean was flustered in front of the smirking boys.

They—Pierre and his friends were people who Jean never interacted with.

Pierre talked to Jean.

「Are you the one in charge of disciplining the overseas students? Now this just cannot do~, you aren't doing your job to properly discipline those guys.」

「D-discipline? No, I, was told to help with everyone who come from overseas.....」

Pierre's hangers-on closed the distance and surrounded Jean when he corrected that statement.

Jean hugged his bag while trembling. Pierre also approached him.

「I don't give a damn. Those guys are eyesore. That means it's also your responsibility.」

「H-how can that」

Jean knew the rumors about Pierre. He was scared of what would befall him after this.

Pierre was the academy's problem child.

He was the second son of Faiviel House, one of the six great nobles.

On his right hand resided the crest held by the six great nobles that was the proof of the sacred tree's divine protection.

The other male students around him also held the divine protection of sacred tree on the back of their right hand. Though the one they had was of lower rank than Pierre's.

All of them were nobles.

「Come with us for a bit. We're going to discipline you. The great me of the six great nobles is going to personally disciplining you, feel honored.」

Pierre had the attitude of looking down to those who weren't noble, but this wasn't something unusual in the commonwealth.

There were two types of human in the commonwealth.

Those who had the sacred tree's divine protection and those who didn't.

Those who had the sacred protection introduced themselves as noble and looked down on those who didn't have the sacred protection.

The nobles didn't only look down on other countries, they also looked down on their fellow countrymen who didn't have the crest.

「Come to behind the school.」

Jean who was led away by Pierre and his gang dropped his bag.

.

## Part 6

I asked the car to stop in front of the school gate and got down in a hurry. I then ran toward behind the school.

「Leon-kun, wait!」

Louise-san also got down from the car, but I ignored her and kept running.

Luxion who had been concealing himself until now appeared near my right shoulder.

「Why didn't you tell me earlier!?」

『He isn't one of the observation targets. Master should praise me instead for noticing this so quickly despite it.』

「Dammit!」

The academy was pointlessly large. Everything was already over when I rushed into that place.

Teachers and students who were still remaining in the academy were gathering to the back of the school building.

At the middle of that there was Jean being hanged upside down from a tree.

I was running out of breath. I could only stand there watching Jean being lowered from the tree.

Luxion had camouflaged himself at that time.

『He is still alive.』

The teachers brought a stretcher to take Jean away to hospital,

「This is horrible.」

「Did they use magic?」

「The infirmary can't treat injuries this bad. Let's bring him to hospital.」

I pushed my way through the crowd toward Jean.

「Sorry, let me through.」

I got close to Jean and talked to him.

「Jean, hang in there! Who did this to you!?!」

「You, stand back.」

Jean's mouth moved while the teachers tried to pry me away from him.

「—Noelle, sorry」

The students around me opened their mouth after the teachers brought Jean away.

「It's those guys.」

「He caught their eyes.」

「He is second year right? I pity him.」

They spoke as though they knew who did this.

I caught a nearby male student and asked him what was going on.

「Oi, who did that to Jean?」

「Eh, you don't know?」

Seeing my serious expression, he watched his surrounding warily while telling me.

「—It's Pierre of Faiviel House. Those guys like to hang someone they don't like on a tree. Careful or you will get hanged too if you snoop around too much.」

The student left after saying that. The other students also left from this place.

I had heard the name of Pierre and Faiviel House before.

『The culprit was the evil noble who targeted the main character in the middle stage? This Pierre is the key character for the event where the main character and a capture target affirmed their love.』

This Pierre was your typical evil noble.

He would cause trouble for the main character. The boy who was the capture target would help the main character and both of them would affirm their love to each other through that event.

He was an event character.

「He's doing whatever he pleases.」

『Master, you must wish to take revenge. But, I can't recommend that course of action. It'll go against your objective. Pierre is a necessary character for the event. If master crush him, the scenario will become completely out of order.』

I couldn't make any move toward Pierre if I wanted to keep the game event stayed on the right course.

It was annoying but I decided to leave Pierre alone.

「That guy is a wonderful enemy. He made me so annoyed I want to punch his face right away.」

I would leave Pierre alone even after what he did to Jean for the sake of the game event.

I was really pathetic.

Louise-san finally arrived to behind the school while I was still rooted on that spot.

She was running out of breath. She then asked me what happened.

「Leon-kun, why did you suddenly go off running like that?」

「—No, it's nothing.」

I was going to overlook a shitty bastard for a game event—I was no better than a shitty bastard myself.

.

## Part 7

Evening.

I headed to the apartment where Jean lived.

I explained the situation to the landlady and borrowed the key to enter inside. There I found a clean room. It was just like Jean to diligently keep his room clean like this.

There was an old dog inside that room. It approached us when we entered inside.

It growled vigilantly, but I ignored it and patted its head.

「Sorry. Your owner is going to have to stay in hospital for a while.」

There was no way it could understand my words, but the old dog stopped growling and licked my hand.

Its legs were trembling just from standing up. Its body had greatly weakened.

Luxion asked me after seeing the dog.

『It don't have long to live.』

「Yeah. We're going to look after it until Jean got discharged from hospital.」

『Does master intend to atone by doing this?』

「Yeah, got any problem with that? I won't take revenge for Jean in order to avoid danger to the world. Well, it's not like we are that close with each other, but it's also a fact that guy has been a lot of help for me.」

In the worst case I would even consider separating Jean and Noelle from each other.

That was why, I should at least do this much for him in return.

「That guy love this Noelle-chan a lot. I'm sure he is worried for her.」

『—Pierre of Faiviel House is it? The six great nobles hold powerful influence in the commonwealth.』

「You can easily find evil noble anywhere.」

I carried Noelle in my arms and walked toward the door. Luxion made a suggestion to me at that time.

『Destroy—everything will be solved if master only tell me that.』

If the commonwealth was destroyed, then the problem of the sacred tree would also be resolved. That would be a happy end for Luxion.

「From the start I wouldn't come here to study if I intend to give you permission for that. Besides, how about you use your thick skull already to understand that I'm not going to choose such method?」

It was really a pain in the ass that the AI who absolutely couldn't forgive the new mankind was this extreme.

『I thought that perhaps master has a change of heart. After all master is a really fickle person.』

「Call it as being adaptable.」

『In master's case it should be called as being indecisive instead.』

I exited the room and locked the door.

「I guess. Even so, this thing about cannot doing anything to Pierre because the one he will make trouble with is more likely to be the main character, it's really irritating.」

I wonder what should I do to the bastard after the event ended?

『Master, what will you do in case Noelle is the main character? Will you separate Noelle from Jean and force her to be together with Loic who is stalking her around?』

「—I wish that Lelia is actually the main character here.」

If possible I wanted the two of them to become happy together.

Jean too, when he was injured it was Noelle's name that unconsciously slipped out from his lips.

Surely he loved her.

「By the way, what are we going to need to take care of Noelle-chan? I wonder what kind of food will be good for her?」

『I will make arrangement for it.』

I'd take care of Noelle-chan until Jean returned.

.

## Part 8

At the academy of Hohlfahrt Kingdom.

A mail from Leon arrived. Ange and Livia were sitting on the bed while happily reading the mail in turn.

The mail mentioned the happening in Alzer Commonwealth.

Creare expressly printed the mail so the two of them could read it themselves.

It was because the two of them previously said that electronic mail was lacking in taste.

However, Livia suddenly became slightly sad after reading the letter in joy.

「It's written here that Leon-san is now taking care of an old dog.」

Ange was also looking worried.

「Seventeen years is really old for a dog. It will be difficult to take care of it.」

In fact the letter also mentioned how difficult it was to look after Noelle.

In the letter it was written how he was practically nursing the dog rather than simply taking care of it. He also made Luxion helping out with it.

「But, Leon too seems to be alright over there. The problem is whether he is getting too close with another woman or not.」

The biggest problem for the two of them would be if Leon was cheating at Alzer Commonwealth.

Ange herself was also feeling discontent because they immediately got separated from each other right after their engagement.

Livia uneasily denied Ange's worry.

「I-it will be fine! Leon-san wrote here that he want to meet with us. Besides he isn't the type of person who would cheat!」

Ange slightly smiled seeing Livia's reaction and teased her.

「Who knows. After all that guy is also a man. Besides, he is a hero who climbed up until the rank of count in one generation. Any woman will surely feel her heart throbbing against such man. If it's me then I absolutely won't let him get away from my grasp.」

「C-certainly Leon-san is a wonderful man, but I don't want him cheating.」

Livia looked like she was going to cry. Ange gently apologized seeing that.

「My bad. Forgive me. I too don't want him cheating. But, there is always a risk for this kind of problem to happen.」

Clarice and also Deirdre who had just graduated were also a danger.

There was a possibility of Leon getting snatched away from the side if they let their guard down.

「I want to give him a warning just to be sure, but Leon too will hate it if we questioned him too much. It's a difficult matter.」

「Can't I just write to Leon-san that cheating is 「Bad!」 in our reply?」

Ange shook her head at Livia's suggestion.

「Even Leon won't be amused if we are suspecting him of cheating even though he isn't doing anything like that. Creare, what is your opinion about that?」

Creare who was suddenly addressed twitched in agitation midair.

「Oi, what's with that reaction?」

Creare took distance from Ange who was approaching it.

『I, it's not what you think! I'm in the middle of experimenting right now. I was just wondering if master would scold me if he found out about it!』

「—Just what in the world are you doing? What do you mean by experiment?」

『T-that's—I can't say it.』

Unlike Luxion, Creare had a personality that was too free-spirited.

Livia scolded Creare.

「Are-chan, doing bad thing is no good, bad child!」

Scolded by the two of them, Creare was faking crying and left the room.

The spherical body didn't have any crying function.

『You two are horrible! Even though—even though I'm working hard for everyone's sake!』

「O-oi!」

「Are-chan!?」

Ange and Livia hurriedly chased after Creare who flew out from the room.

# ***Chapter 5 – Oath to the Sacred Tree***

## ***Part 1***

The classroom was enveloped in gloomy atmosphere since the morning.

The students were talking about Jean who was heavily injured and hospitalized.

「Did you hear? That Jean, yesterday he got hanged down behind the building.」

「It's over for him with a noble setting his sight on him.」

「It's pitiful but, there is nothing that we can do. The culprit was a noble with divine protection.」

It seemed having divine protection or not was something important for the people of the commonwealth.

Apparently if you had divine protection then you could be called a noble. The nobles here had different beginning from the nobles in the kingdom.

They were nobles because they were recognized by the sacred tree.

They wouldn't be noble without that recognition.

And then if you were a noble, anything you did to those without divine protection would be forgiven.

「What a horrible country.」

I muttered to myself. Noelle who was sitting in front of me casted her gaze down.

A boy she was close with got heavily injured by a noble and became hospitalized.

Surely she was feeling depressed.

「Are you alright?」

I talked to Noelle. In respond she nodded slightly with a pale face.

「I'm alright. But, I'm worried about what will happen to Jean now. I don't think he will be able to pay the hospital fee with his situation, besides who will take care of his pet dog now?」

Apparently the apartment where Noelle was living didn't allow the resident to keep animal there.

That was why she wouldn't be able to look after Jean's dog while he was hospitalized.

「Don't worry. I'm taking care of his dog right now.」

「You are?」

Noel looked surprised, but she also seemed relieved to hear that.

「Thank god. Jean really love that dog, so that's a load off my chest.」

「—Yeah.」

「I even considered taking care of it secretly at my place, but my worry is gone with this. Ah, can I come to Leon's house to check on it?」

「Feel free.」

I replied curtly with my eyes closed. Noelle said 「You don't look like in a welcoming mood」 seeing me like that.

But I too couldn't feel happy right now. —I was feeling a lot of guilt in regard to Jean.

Mr. Clement entered the classroom just when Noelle was looking slightly more cheerful.

「Everyone, pipe down. I think you have heard about what just happened, but we'll still begin homeroom like usual.」

Mr. Clement's expression was sterner than usual. I didn't miss him sending a glance at Noelle.

It seemed this person was really concerned about Noelle.

.

## Part 2

After school.

I would be going home together with Noelle. I was waiting for her at the entrance right now.

「She is late.」

『She said that she is going to talk first with her little sister Lelia.』

It seemed they were living in the same apartment, so she didn't want to make her worry because she would come home late.

Being a big sister was hard.

I also wanted a big sister like Noelle. It reminded me of my big sis in the kingdom.

She was a terrible big sister who liked to push around her little brother.

I wished I could trade her with Noelle.

『—Master, there is a bit of trouble.』

「What happened?」

Luxion was monitoring Noelle. It seemed there was a problem happening over there.

『The capture target Loic is approaching Noel. The situation seems dangerous.』

「Spare me from all these troubles.」

『I'll show the way.』

I ran inside the building with Luxion's guidance.

Still, just what in the world was going on that Luxion judged it to be dangerous?

After running for a few moment, I encountered “Onee-chan” when I turned at a corner.

「Why are you in such a hurry like that?」

She became curious seeing me at a hurry.

「Aa~, I’m sorry. I’m pressed for time so please excuse me.」

「Wait. You can tell me.」

「No, actually it’s about Noelle—」

Louise-san’s expression changed when I mentioned Noelle’s name.

Did she hate Noelle that much?

.

## **Part 3**

Noelle was thrust onto a wall in an empty corridor.

「What are you doing!?」

Noelle's back collided on the wall and she glared at the culprit. In respond Loic reached out with one hand and roughly put his hand on the wall.

He intentionally made a loud noise to threaten Noelle. Then he brought his face closer.

「That's my line. Noelle, I heard you will be going to another man's house.」

Noelle's back turned cold.

Loic's face was handsome, but it only caused disgust to well up inside her.

(Why is he this persistent—disgusting)

「Don't touch me!」

Noelle cursed inside her heart while at the outside she thrust away Loic from herself.

But she was facing a man.

He was also taller than her. He was also stronger.

She could only thrust him away slightly.

「I can do as I please. I don't need to ask you for permission. Also, stop spreading rumor that I'm your woman. You're a bother.」

She and Leon were in the classroom when they talked about her going to his home.

In other words, it must be someone in the same classroom who tattled on Loic about it.

It was disgusting how far Loic was going to inquire about her. She couldn't accept it.

Noelle thought that Loic would be enraged at her words, but instead he was smiling.

But, it was a scary smile.

She wanted to back away, but her back was pressed on the wall.

「—Noelle, it's going to be over for you at this rate.」

「I-it's pointless even if you threaten me. I'm not going to do as you ask me.」

「Not that. Right now Pierre is targeting you.」

「Ha?」

Noelle was confused why Pierre's name suddenly came up, but Loic paid her no mind and continued.

「It seems Like Pierre is planning to corner the overseas students. For that he is targeting their caretakers first.」

「Don't tell me, the one who hanged down Jean was」

「Yeah, it's going to be you next. But, if you become my woman then I won't let a mere thug like Pierre lays his hand on you. What're you going to do, Noelle?」

Loic knew what Pierre was going to do. He made use of it to make Noelle become his woman.

Hearing that Noelle—kicked Loic's crotch.

「Don't screw around!」

「Ugh!」

Loic crouched while holding his crotch. Noelle looked at him with a cold gaze.

「Aren't you ashamed with yourself for making use of other people to obtain me? I hate that kind of man.」

Loic burst into cold sweat while crouching. But he still smiled.

「Y-you're still the same—s-stubborn girl. But, it seems you're being too naïve. It's pointless even if you try to rely on Emile. That guy won't be able to protect you. I'm the only one who can protect you.」

Emile came from Pleven House, one of the six great noble houses. He was also Lelia's lover.

He would surely lend her a hand if she asked him. But Loic claimed that it would be pointless.

「If Emile come out, then I'll lend Pierre a hand.」

If Loic who was the eldest son of Barriere House lent Pierre his assistance, then Emile wouldn't be able to do anything by himself.

Noelle became even more offended.

(This guy, how far he is going to—why is Lelia, telling me to be with someone like this!)

「You're saying, you will lend that Pierre a hand?」

Noelle clenched her hands. She understood that right now she couldn't do anything.

(This is really the worst.)

Loic painfully stood up and made a twitching smile while placing his hand on Noelle's shoulder.

「If you become my woman, you will be able to live a life without any inconvenience. Your little sister also wants that for you. But if you refuse—if you're going to belong to another man than me, then right here and right now I'd rather-」

Loic's right hand shined.

His crest began to shine red.

「—I'll never, to the like of you-」

Noelle glared at Loic. Then a voice came from a distance at that timing.

「I won't make it. Grr, in that case!」

『Master, what are you planning? Master! S-sto—』

Noelle turned her gaze toward that voice. Loic's gaze was also lured by that and he looked toward the same direction.

A grey metal ball smashed on Loic's face.

「Buh!」

The iron ball accurately hit Loic's nose. He was bleeding from the nose while crumpling on the floor and then lay down spread-eagled.

The grey ball slowly rolled on the floor before slowly floating up. It turned its red eye toward the approaching Leon.

「Strike! Kidding.」

Leon was rejoicing, but in contrast the grey ball was talking with an angry tone.

『That was because I corrected the trajectory in the middle. There was no way master could hit with your abysmal control. Also, do you have nothing else to say to me?』

Leon snorted.

「You're easy to throw.」

『—As I thought I hate master.』

「Is that so? I feel the same you destruction maniac.」

『Please correct that. I have a name which is "Luxion".』

「What a splendid name. You can show your reverence to me for giving you that name.」

『Shouldn't master treasure me more?』

「I'm treasuring you, in my own way that is.」

The two of them were on bad terms no matter how anyone looked at them.

「Eh, what?」

Loic was slowly getting up while Noelle was in confusion. His hand was pressing his nose, but blood was still trickling down from there.

「A-are you bastard the oversea student?」

Loic was enraged. He made the back of his right hand shined.

It looked like he was planning to use the crest's power.

「Leon, run! This guy is a heir of the six great nobles!」

Noelle stepped forward to cover for Leon, but Loic pushed her away and turned his right hand toward Leon.

「It's too late!」

But—Louise appeared in front of Leon with the crest of her right hand similarly glowing.

Louise was covering for Leon.

「Loic, do you want to anger me?」

Loic lowered his right hand in respond to those words.

「Louise, why are you protecting someone like him! That guy is a scum who laid his hand on my woman!」

Louise smiled thinly in respond and folded her arms.

「Is that true? This is the first time I heard that this woman is your lover. Loic, you should at least be able to differentiate between your delusion and reality you know?」

「Do you seriously want to pick a fight with me?」

Both of them came from the six great nobles.

「Oh, do you want to make this problem bigger than this? It will be you who is at disadvantage in that case.」

「Kuh」

The powers of their crests were equal.

But, Rault House that was currently serving as the assembly chairman had higher status than Barriere House.

Loic turned his back on them and spoke to Noelle before leaving.

「Noelle, don't you dare forget. You don't have any other way except choosing me!」

Noelle gazed at Loic before turning her gaze toward Leon and Louise.

This strange grouping was unexpected for her.

「—Louise, why did you help me?」

She didn't understand why Louise would help her.

「Help? Don't misunderstand. It was only because Leon-kun asked me a favor.」

Leon was smiling, but there was a grey ball with shining red eye floating near his face. The distance was too close it looked like the ball was putting on pressure on Leon.

「So you will really help if I asked for it.」

「T-that's right.」

Noelle's feeling turned really complicated she didn't know what to say, so she decided to at least say thanks.

「Well, the fact is you really helped me just now, so thank you. Thank you both of you.」

Louise turned her back toward Noelle.

「I don't need your thanks. Rather than that, you accompany me for a bit.」

Louise entwined her arm with Leon's arm.

Seeing that Noelle grabbed Leon's other hand.

「Ha? I also have a business with Leon you know?」

Leon was flustered seeing both his arms grabbed by girls.

「Eh? What's this situation? Oi, Luxion help.」

Currently Luxion was averting its red eye from Leon and muttered  
『Now in the middle of cheating』 .

「Bastard, are you abandoning your master!? Also what did you whisper just now!?」

『—I wish master will reflect on yourself a little. I also demand apology from master for throwing me like that. If master doesn't comply, I will report this situation to those two.』

「You're really the worst!」

Louise pulled Leon's arm as he scowled in frustration.

「Never mind that, come with me for a bit. There is someone who I want you to meet.」

Leon tilted his head.

「Someone you want me to meet?」

「—My parents」

「Buh!」

Leon's breath hitched as Louise replied with a slightly troubled face.  
On the other hand Noelle was in astonishment.

Noelle came back to her senses faster than the confused Leon could and questioned Louise.

「W-what are you thinking!? Aren't you the young lady of Rault House!?」

Just what was someone in her status thinking that she wanted Leon to meet her parents?

(Don't tell me, Louise is seriously in love with Leon!?)

Even Louise got flustered seeing Noelle's reaction.

「Y-you idiot! Don't have any weird misunderstanding! There is a reason for—」

Leon was getting shaken back and forth with Noelle and Louise pulling on his arms.

Luxion spoke to Leon in the middle of that.

『Master, a problem occurred.』

## **Part 4**

While Leon and them were in argument.

Brad was called out to behind the school. He was fiddling with his hair while being surrounded by boys.

「—I tried coming because I was called here, but what are your intention by surrounding me like this?」

It was Pierre who called Brad to the back of the school.

「You guys nobles of third rate country swaggering in the commonwealth is an eyesore.」

Pierre stuck out his tongue while making a vulgar expression. Brad let out a small sigh seeing that.

「The nobles of the commonwealth are even more belligerent than what the rumors said. I too have my own position to think about. It will become an international problem if I start something with someone connected to the six great nobles.」

Pierre's hangers-on cackled hearing that.

They knew that what they were doing would become a problem. But they were still doing it even knowing that.

Pierre opened one of his eyes widely and said to Brad.

「Ain't that interesting. I'll personally take you on.」

「—That's quite the confidence you have there.」

「Do it you guys!」

Brad sent his gaze to the boys around him. The hangers-on attacked him with the wooden swords they were carrying.

The hangers-on swung down their wooden swords at Brad.

「There!」

But Brad dodged and pushed one of the opponents with his hand.

The opponent stumbled just from that.

「B-bastard」

Brad felt exasperated inside his heart seeing the hanger-on stood up.

(Are these guys serious? Perhaps they're just playing around?)

The nobles of Hohlfahrt Kingdom had adventurers as their ancestors. From that there was a custom for the noble children to become adventurer since they were student and trained by challenging the dungeon in the capital.

Brad wasn't the type to fight at the frontline, but he was stronger than Pierre's hangers-on.

「This son of a bitch!」

Brad used his knee to hit the stomach of a boy who attacked him from behind. He then snatched the boy's wooden sword to beat back the hangers-on that were assaulting him.

(This is the result of my training.)

He felt a bit happy, but he hid his feeling and gazed at Pierre calmly.

「Still want to continue?」

「Tsk! You guys are too weak!」

Pierre yelled at the others, but from where Brad stood, Pierre looked even weaker than these boys.

「I don't want to get too rough. How about it? It will be better if both of us withdraw here.」

Brad tried to settle this matter peacefully, but then Pierre pointed his right hand to him.

「Are you stupid? You think you have won just because you're stronger with sword!?」

The surrounding hangers-on pointed their palms toward Brad.

「Fire Ball!」

「Ice Needle!」

「Energy Bolt!」

They fired their magic at Brad one after another.

(Are these guys in their right mind!?)

Brad calmly dealt with the attacks even while feeling shocked inside. In the first place Brad was better with magic than sword.

「Earth Wall.」

When Brad stabbed the ground with his wooden sword, earth walls rose up around him. The walls were protecting him from the magic attacks.

The hangers-on sensed the difference in strength and sent Pierre pleading gazes asking for help.

「—You guys are really a useless bunch!」

Brad tried to calm down the enraged Pierre.

「Let's end this already. The difference in our strength is clear.」

Brad was happy at the inside because he could say that line that he wanted to say at least once. But Pierre was making an eerie smile.

(What?)

While Brad kept his guard up, Pierre lifted his right hand and his crest glowed.

「You've angered me, you fake nobles from third rate country!」

Then a magic circle formed right under Brad. The earth walls he formed crumbled down.

「What!?」

Brad took a stance with his wooden sword in panic. Then next tree roots flew out from the ground toward Brad.

His wooden sword was smashed when he defended against the roots. Then an abnormality occurred when he tried using magic.

「Tsk! Fire Lance!」

Tree roots could be burned away with flame—that was Brad's thought, but his magic didn't activate.

「W-why!?」

He didn't make a mistake with his magic. Rather it felt more like his magic was stopped from activating by external factor.

The tree roots entwined around Brad's ankle and lifted him up.

Brad ended up getting hanged upside down. He tried to get away somehow, but the tree roots were constricting around his ankle tightly so he couldn't escape.

「Damn it!」

He was surrounded by the hangers-on with wooden swords in their hands and Pierre whose right hand was glowing.

They were grinning around Brad.

Brad raised his arms and crossed them to protect his body while being suspended upside down like that.

Pierre placed his hand on his forehead while his other hand was pointing at Brad and laughed.

「Can't act smug anymore now can't you. Aa! You need extra punishment for acting cocky like that. I'm gonna mess up that face of yours!」

Brad felt mortified inside, even so he didn't show it on his face.

(This is bad. Marie—Julius—everyone, I'm going to trouble all of you, please forgive me.)

For an instant he wondered what Leon would do in this kind of situation. Thinking that made him feel slightly amused that he smiled. Pierre yelled at that time.

「Do it!」

.

## **Part 5**

At Marie's mansion.

The mansion that was prepared for them was big and also had a garden. It was very luxurious.

But, unfortunately Marie and others were currently in the middle of being punished.

Only the minimum number of servants was prepared in order to maintain the mansion. None of the servants lived in the mansion to constantly provide their assistance. All of them would only come and work for a few hours per day before going home.

All the servants would have gone home already when night came. Because of that things like dinner would have to be prepared by their own effort.

Kyle was preparing the tableware in the dining hall. There Greg who was hungry was waiting for dinner while placing his cheek on the table.

「Kyle, is the dinner not done yet? I'm already hungry.」

Greg had been annoying Kyle since some time ago by saying 「I'm hungry」 frequently. It exasperated Kyle.

「Then please help me out.」

「I can't. I'm so hungry I can't move.」

Kyle wanted to punch Greg's face, but he endured and looked at the kitchen.

Marie and Cara's voices were coming from there.

「Boil a lot of pasta!」

「Yes, Marie-sama!」

「Geez! Everyone is in that growth period where all of them are eating like bottomless barrel!」

It was a lot of work preparing food because there were eight people in their growth period here.

But, the men starting from Julius wouldn't help out.

Kyle was the only exception.

Kyle sighed. Greg asked him about the other members who hadn't entered the dining room.

「Where is everyone else?」

「Julius and Jilk are in their room preparing for tomorrow. They're quiet diligent. As for Chris, he said that he will be practice swinging at the garden because he has nothing to do.」

Even though it would be better if he helped out if he had such free time.

Kyle held back from voicing his true feeling.

(Well, these people were raised as young master through and through. For them it's only natural for the servants to do this kind of work.)

Kyle thought it was pointless to expect anything from them. It was then he heard a ruckus from the entrance.

The door was opened roughly and Chris's voice resounded through the mansion.

「Everyone, trouble!」

Even Marie showed her face from the kitchen hearing that tense voice.

.

## Part 6

Marie tied her hair behind her and wearing apron because she was cooking dinner.

Marie came to the mansion's entrance in such getup and felt shocked by the sight that was waiting for her there.

「Brad!」

Brad was lying on the ground with rope tying him.

A male student from the academy was sitting on him.

「Yo, third rate country's people, good evening. I am Pierre-sama of Faiviel House.」

Marie wanted to rush out when she saw Brad's swollen face, but Julius grabbed her shoulder.

「Julius, let go!」

「Calm down Marie. —Brad is still alive. Right now we should focus on these guys who are brazenly coming here like this.」

Pierre was bringing his hangers-on with him here. There were also several cars behind them.

All of the cars seemed to have been modified to have gaudy look.

Pierre who was sitting on top of Brad was looking at Julius with a smirk on his face.

「So you're the former crown prince of the kingdom who got disinherited. That's a pathetic face you got there.」

Marie was enraged.

(This guy, Pierre—why is he here at our home? Also your face is even more horrible here!)

But Julius was keeping his composure even when the other party made fun of him.

「—Are you guys the one who injured Brad like that?」

Julius's voice was colder than usual. He must be very angry.

Pierre answered with a broad grin.

「Yep. This guy is so weak it was boring. You guys are too weak. How about you guys go back home already?」

Jilk and others who were waiting behind were ready to draw out their weapons anytime.

Veins were pulsing on Greg's forehead. He looked like he was going to rush out anytime.

Chris—he was bringing a wooden sword that he was using for his practice swinging.

Kyle and Cara were hiding behind everyone.

Julius talked to Pierre as everyone's representative.

「How about you hand over Brad to us?」

「That's fine. That's what we brought him here for. Aa~, right right. I've some businesses with you guys. Play for a bit with me.」

Marie got a bad premonition.

(Eh? Wait a second? It feels like I'm forgetting something.)

Pierre stood up and challenged Julius to a match.

「Have a match with me. If I win—I'll take your ship. I'll give back this guy whether I win or lose. But, I won't hand him back if you don't accept the match. I'll even swear to the sacred tree if you guys don't believe me.」

Einhorn immediately came to Marie's mind when she heard about ship.

(Ship—but Einhorn is big bro's ship. We can't make any bet using it. Still, I feel like I've heard about this swearing to the sacred tree—)

Julius also had the same thought like Marie.

「I can't do that. That ship belongs to Bartfalt. I have no right for it.」

「Is that so? Then perhaps I'll kill this guy.」

Pierre grabbed Brad's hair and lifted up his head. Julius immediately talked seeing that.

「Wait! I'll accept the match, but I can't make a bet with the ship—」

Pierre's mouth distorted with a wide smile that looked like crescent moon at the next moment. The back of his right hand also glowed.

「You said it, you said that you accept! You swore to the sacred tree!」

Pierre started laughing as though he had already won. He spread out his hands and looked up to the sky.

Julius was slightly taken aback when Pierre suddenly started laughing loudly.

「W-what are you saying」

But Marie recalled something at this time.

「N-no! You can't accept this match!」

A magic circle manifested with Pierre at the center. It spread out until even the area where Marie and others were standing.

Marie's face paled seeing the magic circle on the ground.

(I remember. This guy was finding fault with the main character and then he used—)

Pierre started explaining with a boasting tone.

「This match is sworn to the sacred tree. You guys have no choice but to accept this match! The sacred tree is absolute in this country. A match that is held by swearing oath to the sacred tree is something holy and absolute! Only death will await those who break the oath!」

'Hyahyahya' Pierre let out a sinister laugh. He pointed at Julius and told him what the match would be.

「The match is simple. You guys, kill each other until only one of you remain.」

The match method that Pierre thrust before them sounded like he was screwing around. It made Julius and others ran out of patience.

「Stop screwing around!」

When Jilk was about to draw out his handgun, thin tree roots and vines grew out from the magic circle and restrained everyone there except Pierre and his gang.

Marie tried to remove the vine that was entwined around her neck, but it was impossible to do that using human strength.

Pierre put his hands into his uniform's pockets and looked at them while laughing.

「It's you guys who are screwing around here. This is a match that is sworn to the sacred tree. It will be your defeat if you guys don't quickly kill each other.」

Marie gritted her teeth while looking at Pierre.

(What's with this guy? Even in the game he was an unfair small fry but, this is just plain cheating! Besides, the gambled object here is—)

Einhorn was Leon's ship.

It would be a disaster for Marie if it was taken away.

(That'll be completely crossing big bro's yellow zone if that happen!?)

Julius glared at Pierre and showed his stubbornness.

「There's no way we'll kill each other. In the first place an absurd match like this can't possibly be allowed.」

「This country isn't your third rate country. You're in Alzer, the country of absolute winner. You're dreaming too much if you think that you can receive the same treatment like us.」

The commonwealth was undefeated when it came to defensive battle.

This country was certainly an astounding country.

But, this kind of situation was just unreasonable. Julius and others got angry in denial. But then pain suddenly ran through their neck.

「Kuh! W-what?」

Greg forcefully tore off the vine around his neck. There around his neck was a tattoo that looked like collar.

Chris noticed that and told Greg.

「Greg, there is some kind of pattern on your neck.」

「Your neck too.」

Everyone got collar-like tattoo printed on their neck.

The magic circle then vanished and the roots and vines stopped moving.

「The oath to the sacred tree is absolute. The heinous criminal who tried to violate it will be given punishment by the sacred tree directly. If you guys try to disobey, then your head will fly.」

Julius's eyes opened wide at Pierre's explanation.

Everyone looked toward Marie. There her neck was also engraved with the crest from the sacred tree.

The four were enraged at Pierre, even so they couldn't do anything right now.

Pierre and his gang got into their cars.

「Now then, let's take a look at the airship from a third-rate country. It's already mine now after all.」

Pierre and his gang left.

Julius ran toward Marie and spoke to her in worry.

「Marie, are you alright!?」

「—away」

「What?」

「Contact Leon right away! Listen, you mustn't agitate him no matter what. Explain the situation to him properly and ask him to be understanding! A-anyway, it will become a disaster if we don't tell him right away!」

「I-I get it! I'll go to tell him right away.」

Julius immediately headed to where Leon was in order to explain the situation after seeing Marie looking so panicked.

.

## **Part 7**

A lot happened, but I could finally go home.

Good grief, what's with my popularity?

I made two fiancées at Hohlfahrt Kingdom, then immediately after that two girls appeared at where I was studying abroad and they were fighting over me. There should be a limit at how unexpected a situation could become.

「What do you think Noelle-chan? Don't you think that my popularity is amazing?」

I returned home and looked after Noelle-chan.

In the end I refused Louise-san's invitation and Noelle also decided to come to my house another day.

Noelle-chan was eating the mushy dog food that Luxion prepared. After it finished eating it immediately sat down on the layered blankets that were prepared nearby.

It looked at my face and its tongue lolled out.

A baby bed had been prepared for Noelle-chan. We laid it there and took care of it.

The baby bed was prepared in order to reduce the burden on its waist, but it worked better than expected.

「She finished all the food.」

I was watching Noelle-chan who looked lively too today. But then Luxion took some distance from me and looking at me.

「What?」

『The nutrition and amount of the food prepared had been perfectly calculated by me. I arranged so it was the amount that she could properly finish.』

It seemed Luxion was still angry about me throwing him.

This AI was really troublesome.

『Do you have any complaint?』

『Does master think I won't have any?』

『You're really cold toward your master.』

『Right now I'm regretting recognizing master as my owner.』

『Is that so? Too bad for you.』

While I was troubled of how to deal with Luxion's sulking, Noelle-chan raised its head and looked toward outside.

Right after that the entrance's door got pounded loudly.

『Who could it be at this kind of time?』

『—Master, we haven't finished talking yet. I believe that we should have a serious talk about the future.』

『Let's do it another time.』

I left the room and headed to the entrance. There I found it was Chris who was pounding the door loudly.

He was breathing hard. It seemed he was running until here without stopping.

『What's wrong?』

『Bartfalt—sorry!』

「For what?」

I let Chris inside and heard him explaining what happened in detail.

# **Chapter 6 – Betrayal**

.

## **Part 1**

I came to the harbor at night. The place was very noisy when I arrived.

When I reached the place where Einhorn was anchored, there were a lot of people there boarding it as they pleased.

There was a crest on the hull emitting a faint light.

Was that the sacred tree's crest?

Marie and others who had arrived earlier approached me while I was looking up at it.

All of them were present here. They were making apologetic faces toward me.

「I-I'm sorry. Actually—」

Marie's face was looking pale and her body was trembling. She tried to explain how things got this way but I stopped her.

「I already heard from Chris. I'm amazed that you guys were able to gamble using other person's possession.」

「No! It was because of those guys-」

Julius objected in Marie's place, but I turned my gaze toward the man who was walking out from Einhorn.

That man was Pierre.

He had purple color just like Brad, but compared to him this man lacked any refinement.

「So you're this ship's previous owner.」

「Previous?」

The men who were boarding Einhorn must be Pierre's lackeys.

They were looking down at us from the deck while drinking alcohol and laughing.

「Is he coming to take back this ship~」

「There is no way he can」

「You guys will die if you against the sacred tree.」

It irritated me seeing those guys doing as they pleased with other person's airship.

Pierre brought his face closer to me.

「This ship now belongs to this great Pierre-sama. You see that crest over there? That's the proof that the sacred tree recognized this ship as mine. The sacred tree won't just stay quiet if you try taking it back. Want to give it a try?」

I wanted to see it myself just what would happen if I tried, but I refrained for now.

「I give up already after seeing your attitude, but I guess I'll try asking just in case. I want you to give it back.」

In respond Pierre spat at me.

Pierre's saliva hit my cheek. It was disgusting.

「How about no.」

「Is that so?」

「At first I didn't have any expectation for this ship. I considered destroying it right in front of you guys. But, this ship is fitting for this Pierre-sama. The armor is also quiet powerful even though it got a lame appearance. I'm going to make use of it.」

It seemed he had also investigated about Arroganz.

This guy worked fast.

Then Luxion who was floating around my right shoulder moved to Pierre's left shoulder without saying anything. It then turned its red lens toward me.

Pierre was even more surprised than me.

「What is this thing?」

『It's an honor to meet you. I am Luxion—the one who is managing this Einhorn. Einhorn's ownership has changed hand, so my master has also been changed. I'm looking forward to serve you from here on.』

「—Luxion」

Luxion averted its red lens from my glare.

Marie who was watching the exchange just now fell into confusion.

「W-wait a second! Your owner is Leon isn't it!?」

Luxion replied indifferently.

『It was until just now. But, from now this person is my new owner.』

「N-no way」

Pierre too somehow guessed what was going on after seeing Marie's dejected look.

He placed his hand on Luxion and laughed.

「I'm surprised but, so that's how it is. This thing is a type of familiar that is managing this airship. No wonder there isn't any sign of crew inside even though it's a ship this big.」

『—Yes. There won't be any need for crew with me here.』

「Awesome! I'm liking it more and more.」

Pierre laughed at me in a good mood.

「How's that? How does it feel to have not just your ship but even your familiar taken away? If you've learned your lesson then leave and never come back anymore to Alzer. Well, if you don't like it and want to take your ship back—this Pierre-sama will take you on anytime.」

The commonwealth was undefeated in defensive battle.

Pierre too wasn't saying that as a mere bluff. He was seriously not minding even if it became a war against the kingdom.

I'm completely fed up.

「Then how about we fight over my ship right away?」

Pierre rejected my offer.

「You think I'm going to make a bet with someone like you who have nothing? Come again when you have something as good as this ship. I'll accept your challenge if you do that. Though it'll be impossible for me to lose no matter what you do.」

I wiped the spit on my cheek and turned my back toward Pierre before walking out of the harbor.

「Don't forget those words.」

「Yeah, I'll take you on anywhere anytime if you can prepare something as good as this ship.」

‘Kehya kehya’ Pierre let out a strange laugh. This guy really was a villain to the core.

Marie and others followed behind me.

Now then, what to do now?

.

## **Part 2**

Marie sat on her knees on the floor when they arrived back home.

She couldn't stop letting out cold sweat. She also couldn't raise her face.

Leon was walking in circles with deliberate slowness around her.

「In other words you were unable to stop Julius from carelessly accepting the match.」

「—I'm shorry」

She fumbled her words.

But, it was a trivial matter.

What was important right now was the fact that Leon was enraged.

Marie and Leon were siblings at their past life.

Because of that Marie knew where was the line that must not be crossed to keep Leon from getting truly angry.

At the past life she was also taking advantage of him while being careful to stop right before she crossed the line.

Because as long as she didn't cross the line Leon would spoil her.

She also knew that when Leon was seriously angry, he wouldn't blow up. Instead he would calmly corner his opponent.

There was this incident that happened in her past life.

When he was an elementary school student, Leon once became a target for bullying by the naughty brats in his class.

Marie only learned about this incident long after it ended.

At that time she still thought 「Controlling big bro is really easy」 , but the story that she heard from her mother appalled her.

There were three kids who bullied Leon, but apparently he did something that caused the three of them to transfer to another school.

Before they transferred, the leader of the three kids came to Leon's home while crying to complain, but Leon was only smiling at the kid.

It seemed Leon said 「Do your best at your new school」 to the kid. It made the kid ran home while crying.

The man who made his bullies changed school—that was Leon.

He was still at elementary school at that time. Marie couldn't even imagine what in the world he did that it resulted in something like that.

She remembered how she swore to absolutely never angered her big brother when she was in middle school.

Yes—Leon was a man who would be thorough when he decided to do something.

「Oath to the sacred tree is it? I never heard you mentioning it before. Perhaps it was me who simply forgot it? Isn't this something that is really important?」

Marie couldn't stop trembling under Leon's interrogation.

「I forgot about it until today. It's my fault.」

「Is that so? So you forgot to tell me. —That's truly unfortunate, Marie-san.」

She wanted to cry but she held it back.

(Do, don't cry no matter what. Big bro really hate crying woman, so you will only offend him if you cry here.)

Marie desperately held back from crying while lowering her head.

She performed a kowtow.

To be honest, this was all Pierre's fault. She wished that Leon would also hear what they had to say in their defense. But making excuse would only backfire on her when Leon was genuinely angry like this.

There was one more important thing to consider. Leon had experienced going to war.

Marie was scared by that fact.

(I once saw in TV that once someone used gun, their trigger finger will get lighter!)

The knowledge from her past life was telling her that Leon right now would even take her life if he decided to do so.

(PIERRE YOU STUPID BASTARDDDD! WHY ARE YOU ANGERING MY BIG BROOOO! He also called me "Marie-san" just now, he's treating me like a stranger)

「Please forgive me. I'll do anything!」

「What a wonderful spirit. Then I shall have you display your sincerity. But before that, just go and heal Brad already.」

Brad was laid down on his bed after he had been given first aid treatment.

Marie stood up straight and saluted before running away from the room.

「I'm truly sorry! Please excuse me!」

Marie escaped out of the room and ran while wiping her tears.

(This is baddddd! At this rate my second life is going to be over with big bro killing me. Or perhaps it will be over with big bro abandoning me! I don't want thattttt!!)

For the first time in a while Marie's brain was working in full capacity for a way to survive through this situation.

.

## **Part 3**

「—Perhaps I threatened her too much.」

They wagered my ship without asking and allowed Pierre to do as he pleased.

I lightly vented my displeasure from that to Marie, but it seemed to be effective enough.

Well, it like this matter was completely her fault.

Watching her made me even felt like she was too pitiful, so I'd forgive her this time with just this.

「Now then, the problem here is Pierre. But still, why was he causing trouble with us?」

It was troublesome because Pierre was a key character for a major event.

I never even considered that he would make a move on us.

I thought he would make trouble with the main character, so I only focused on Noelle and Lelia. Now it came back to bite me in the ass.

「Einhorn got taken away and Luxion is also switching side.」

It was painful that I couldn't predict what Pierre would do now.

Would he make trouble with the main character just like in the game, or had the game scenario gone out of whack already?

Life just wouldn't go as we wanted it.

「—Even so that Luxion, could it be that he was actually really angry?」

When he switched side from me to Pierre, I couldn't shake the feeling that he was angry.

Was it just my imagination?

.

## **Part 4**

The next day, Noelle found the classroom's atmosphere was strange when she came to the academy.

「Morning~」

She made her greeting but no reply came.

Far from that, her classmates were averting their gazes from her.

「Eh, what?」

Noelle was shaken, but she noticed another strange thing.

「Eh? Why is there fewer desks?」

The desks and chairs filling the classroom. Some of them were removed so now there were two empty spots inside the class.

Those spots were where Leon and Brad were sitting before.

Her gaze scanned the inside of the classroom. Most of her classmates were looking down awkwardly.

In addition she also couldn't find Leon and Brad.

「—What's going on?」

Noelle approached a female friend nearby, but the girl started to fidget and her gaze wandered around suspiciously.

「Did something happen?」

「E-err」

The girl looked troubled. It was a boy who Noelle was close with who gave an explanation in her place.

「The overseas students got into a quarrel with a noble. Since the morning there were rumors going around that they had been thoroughly stamped out. Noelle, you were going to be targeted too. Just what have you done?」

「W-why are you asking me!? I haven't done anything! Forget that, are you guys going to obediently follow the words of that kind of guys!?」

Her classmates averted their gazes from her.

The six great nobles' standing was absolute in the commonwealth.

The nobles who were chosen by the sacred tree didn't only have influence, they could also use a part of the sacred tree's power.

They would become unable to live in this country if they defied the nobles.

Noelle immediately ran out of the classroom.

However she bumped onto Loic who was waiting for her in the corridor.

「Good morning, Noelle.」

Loic greeted her with a smile. Noelle felt a chill seeing him in this morning.

「—Loic, you」

「Do you feel like accepting my love now?」

There was no doubt that this guy was involved with the situation inside the classroom.

(This guy, will go this far? Also, why is he carrying a collar with him?)

Loic was showing her a refreshing smile, but his hands were holding a chain and a collar for some reason.

「Isn't this collar pretty? This will be the proof of our love. If you're going to run away from me, then I have no choice except tying you down with this thing so you can't run away anywhere.」

(He is lying right? What's with this guy)

It was a scene straight from horror movie right in the morning. Noelle immediately ran away from Loic.

Loic didn't chase after her.

「Soon you will learn the reality and come back to me. I'm looking forward to that, Noelle.」

Noelle's brain couldn't comprehend what was going on.

But there was only one thing that she knew. It would be bad if she didn't run away from here. Noelle's danger sense was blaring loudly inside her.

(This is bad. That guy right now is really a bad news. I need to do something, if not—)

Noelle went to ask for help—from his little sister Lelia.

.

## Part 5

Around the time such trouble was happening in the academy.

There was also a commotion occurring in the harbor.

「WOOOOHOOOO!」

Pierre was piloting Arroganz to fly around through the airships that were coming and going from the harbor.

The armor flew past with great speed right beside the airships. The shockwave from that movement shook the ships' hulls.

The crews and passengers on the ships' decks were panicked by the shaking. Pierre opened his mouth wide and laughed seeing that.

「This thing is awesomee! It got lame appearance, but its power and speed are the best!」

Luxion's voice sounded inside Arroganz's cockpit.

『It's good to know that Pierre-sama is having fun.』

「Oi, one eye. Tell me more about this armor. Is there any more interesting thing it can do?」

He had been testing Einhorn and Arroganz's performance since early in the morning. The result brought Pierre good mood which drove him to rampage wildly in the harbor.

『However, the guards are heading this way right now.』

「There ain't no way those small fries are going to against this me! The great Pierre-sama of Faiviel House. I'll tear them apart if they got any complaint.」

『I see. So a member of the six great nobles has stronger influence than even government official.』

『Don't ask me about something so obvious. More importantly, this thing made me badly want to try it in real combat. Isn't there a handy enemy somewhere that I can use to test this baby?』

『In that case, I believe Hohlfahrt Kingdom will be appropriate.』

『What. Do you want to kill your previous owner? You're also a bad guy huh.』

『—Perhaps that is true.』

『But, Hohlfahrt Kingdom is quite big. It's just the right opponent for me to rack achievements. Should I send them the head of their prince to provoke them?』

『Is Pierre-sama planning to create a situation where the kingdom will be forced to attack so it will turn into a defensive battle for the commonwealth?』

『They will come here on their own if I provoke them. This place is Alzer. There won't be any chance for us to lose as long as the sacred tree's divine protection is with us.』

Pierre looked like he was having fun. He continued talking boastfully without watching what he said.

『—I see. I understand. In that case, perhaps it will be better to target someone else.』

『Aa?』

『Leon Fou Bartfalt—he is a hero in Hohlfahrt Kingdom. If Pierre-sama take his head, not only it will become an achievement for

Pierre-sama, the kingdom also won't be able to stay quiet. Leon's fiancée is a daughter of a duke in the kingdom. The royal family won't be able to stay quiet too.』

「Hee~, that's great. Killing that hero and taking his fiancée is going to be interesting.」

Pierre's thinking was vulgar to the extreme.

『Yes, Leon should become a good target.』

Like that Luxion was guiding Pierre to target Leon.

.

## Part 6

At the embassy of Hohlfahrt Kingdom.

Marie came there in the morning to report what the commonwealth had done to them, but the reaction of the staffs there was unfavorable.

「A protest! Let's lodge a formal protest! This act is completely unjust and oppressive!」

The reason Marie was protesting this strongly was also as an appeal to Leon.

She was also simply aiming to appeal to the country to solve this problem for them.

But, the staff who was dealing with her gave an unexpected reply.

「I'm very sorry. We will report this to back home, but I don't think it will bring the result that Marie-dono is wishing for.」

「Why!? I just want them to return Einhorn back!」

That was the only thing she need. She would be able to somehow vindicate herself to Leon with that.

Conversely Leon would stay angry with her as long as that didn't happen.

Leon would keep calling her 'Marie-san' as though she was a stranger.

「Currently the kingdom is importing magic stones in great amount from Alzer Commonwealth.」

「—Ah!」

Marie recalled her talk with Leon and Luxion before arriving in the commonwealth. Alzer was a strong country with abundant resource that could export magic stones. Even Hohlfahrt Kingdom would want to avoid getting into conflict with such country.

Furthermore the commonwealth was also a militarily powerful enemy that was undefeated in defensive battle.

「We will lodge a complaint to the commonwealth. We will also report this back to the kingdom. But I don't think that the commonwealth will treat it seriously.」

「Why~!」

Marie felt like crying.

Julius was accompanying her here. He took over the talk with the staff.

「Can't you do something? No matter how you look at it, they have gone too far.」

「—Your highness, this is the commonwealth. Nevertheless, to think that you will be targeted by Faiviel House.」

「Is that house's reputation really that bad?」

「They are the worst house among the six great nobles.」

Marie was anxious at the inside.

(W-what now? At this rate big bro will really abandon me for real!)

Marie immediately planned her next move after finding out that it would be pointless even if she complained to the embassy.

.

## Part 7

At the academy.

Lelia was in a bad mood because Noelle was calling for her right from the morning. She didn't even try to hide it from her expression.

「Why do I have to skip the first period like this?」

「So, sorry. But, the situation is really bad so I want to ask you for help.」

They were twin sisters, but their personality was completely different.

If Noelle was a frank and lively girl, Lelia was a composed and intellectual girl.

Lelia let out a long sigh and listened to Noelle while folding her arms.

「What did you do?」

「It wasn't me! Pierre is trying to chase out Leon and the other overseas students. What's more it looks like Loic is also lending him a hand. He was telling me various scary things in the morning.」

Noelle was also in confusion right now. She couldn't explain herself well.

Lelia wasn't showing any concern in her face.

「I know about the matter with Pierre. But putting that aside, big sis just need to go out already with Loic to avoid all these troubles.」

「—I told you already before. I hate the current him. This is because you are instigating him.」

「Do you want to say that this is my fault? It was you big sis who said that you don't dislike him, so I gave him advise how to get along with big sis. There shouldn't be any problem. He has a nice face, what's more he is a heir of a great noble house.」

「I won't fall in love with someone for those kinds of things!」

In the past Loic was kinder. Noelle didn't hate him then.

But, without her noticing it his desire to monopolize her grew stronger. He would interfere with everything that Noelle was doing.

It was Lelia who was giving Loic a push on the back.

「Those kinds of things? Do you want to talk about childish things like love or whatever? Grow up already.」

They were twins but their way of thinking was different.

Noelle was unable to accept this part of Lelia.

「—Anyway, I hate Loic.」

「Ah, is that so. Even so I wish that big sis won't inconvenient me. I'm also busy here with my own things.」

「S-sorry. But this time the danger is really real. Help me here.」

Noelle felt that she was in danger after meeting Loic in the morning. She hugged herself in fear.

But even seeing Noelle like that, Lelia did nothing except watching her with a cold gaze.

「You only need to go out with Loic to make the trouble go away. You'll be able to help those overseas students too by doing that.」

「Lelia, you aren't listening to what I'm saying!」

Lelia turned around to leave. Noelle clung to her arms, but Lelia shook her off.

「Kyah!」

Lelia was looking down on Noelle who fell down on her rear.

「You're really a bother big sis. I told you I'm busy right now. I'll try talking with Emile about Pierre, but solve the matter of Loic by yourself.」

Noelle watched Lelia leaving and looked down.

「—Just what should I do」

.

## **Part 8**

At night.

When I returned home from shopping, I found a girl sitting in front of the house.

A situation where there was a girl in front of my residence at night—wasn't the first time for me.

I had experienced this before with my little sister in the past life.

That Marie, in the past life she played around too much and didn't have any money to go home, so she was waiting until I returned home by sitting in front of my apartment.

—It was damn scary.

Now then, I could guess who was waiting for me by looking at the hair color of the girl sitting there.

「It's pretty late already, what's wrong?」

Noelle lifted up her face.

「Sorry. I don't want to go home today.」

There wasn't any liveliness inside her smile. It was pretty clear that she was forcing herself to smile.

「Come inside.」

「Sorry. I'm really sorry. I came here even though you yourself must have a lot of trouble right now.」

Looks like she knew about our situation.

「How was the situation in the academy?」

Noelle scratched her head with her right hand and laughed while telling me.

「It was the worst there.」

「I see.」

I entered inside with my shopping bag in hand. Then I took care of Noelle-chan.

.

## Part 9

Noelle was patting Noelle-chan.

I asked her about a lot of things while she was doing that, but there were a lot of differences in her story from the story that I heard from Marie.

Loic's attitude and words were really unthinkable for a capture target.

In addition Pierre was making trouble for us instead of the main character.

Noelle was getting cornered by Loic while on the contrary Lelia was getting protected by Emile.

—I can't pinpoint who is the main character like this.

I tidied up the table and wrote a letter on it. Noelle was watching me.

「What are you doing?」

「I'm writing letter to back home. I'll also have to send souvenir back soon, if not my family will become annoying. I have to report back about what happened recently too.」

I needed to report to that shitty bastard Roland that the commonwealth was picking a fight with me.

I really wanted to see just what kind of face he would make when he read my report.

I was writing several letters excitedly.

「Sorry, you're going through something like this even though you came here for studying abroad.」

Noelle apologized to me. I told her 「It's fine」 . In the first place it was me who decided to come here. I came in order to nip a future worry in the bud.

She didn't need to apologize to me—it wasn't her fault.

「Are you and the others going to go back to your country?」

「There is also our honor to consider. I don't think I'll be able to return until I take back my airship from Pierre.」

「—It's impossible. You won't be able to take it back easily after the oath to sacred tree has come into play like this.」

「You know a lot.」

「W-well, just so-so.」

I looked at Noelle who hurriedly try to gloss over her knowledge while considering my plan from here on.

「Unfortunately although I look like this but I also have a standing. It will become a problem if I run home with my tail between my legs. Also, I need to collect a considerable compensation from the commonwealth that won't apologize even after their noble went that far.」

I was planning to bear with things to some degree, but Pierre had crossed the line.

As expected even I would get a bit angry after something like that.

「Are you serious?」

Noelle asked me in surprise. I nodded to her.

「The problem is how to drag Pierre into the duel stage. Is there any treasure, one so extraordinary that guy would leap to it even if it's in front of everyone's eyes?」

Noelle looked slightly turned off.

「I heard that the people of Hohlfahrt is brave, but this far exceeded my imagination. To think that you still want to try challenging Pierre even after what he had done to you. He has the sacred tree's divine protection you know?」

「That doesn't matter.」

Alzer Commonwealth's legend of invincibility, it was clearly related with the sacred tree. That was our hypothesis.

In fact that hypothesis was correct.

「Well, right now I will take my time forming a plan leisurely. Noelle, you can also stay here as long as you like.」

「—Eh?」

Noelle made a surprised face. I looked at her while waving my hand nonchalantly.

「No worry. I won't do anything strange to you. You can't return home right?」

「Y-yeah.」

It seemed she got into quarrel with her little sister Lelia, but this house got some empty rooms so there wouldn't be any problem even if she stayed here for a while.

Because now that Luxion wasn't at my side, it would be scarier to not know where Noelle was.

## **Part 10**

Several days later.

There was a facility called sacred tree temple in the former Lespinasse territory. A meeting of the six great nobles was held there.

The current heads of the six great nobles were gathered there.

The unimportant agendas were taken care of by their subordinates, but there were matters that needed their permission to be carried out. They were holding a discussion about such matters today.

One of the important agendas was the matter of Pierre from Faiviel House picking a fight with Hohlfahrt Kingdom.

The acting chairman, Albergue Sara Rault was reading a written report expressionlessly.

But at the inside he was filled with disgust.

(Again. Faiviel House never learns.)

Provoking the opponent to attack into their territory was already like the specialty of Alzer Commonwealth.

The commonwealth was powerful when it came to defensive battle, so much that they wanted to make other country came attacking.

Because of that they had a history of making provocative act toward other countries over and over.

(How long are we going to continue doing something like this?)

He was utterly disgusted inside his heart.

Albergue was a man in the middle of his forties. His body was tall and well trained. It made him looked like he was still in his thirties.

He looked like a cool middle-aged man with his short hair and his suited figure.

He questioned the father of the person in question as the acting chairman.

「Lord Lambert, do you have anything to say regarding this provocative act toward Hohlfahrt Kingdom?」

In exact opposite to Albergue, the head of the problematic Faiviel House, Lambert lo Faiviel was a small and fat man.

His hair was balding. His clothes were also covered all over with too many decorations that it lacked refinement.

「My son had done something embarrassing. But, he did that also because of his wish to raise military achievements. Recently there are few countries that would attack Alzer. Shouldn't we let this devolve into a war with Hohlfahrt Kingdom so that the youngsters can have their moment in the spotlight?」

The one who displayed displeasure to Lambert's remark was the current head of Druille House who possessed great influence despite his youth.

He was a handsome man with short curly blond hair and green eyes. His name was Fernand Toara Druille.

He was still in his early twenties. He was the youngest one here.

「Did he pick a fight with another country for personal reason? I don't think he understand his position as a noble.」

Fernand's sound argument made Lambert turned his face away.

「This greenhorn. Just say it if you're scared of war, you don't need to come along.」

The unbroken record of their invincibility in defensive battle made the perception of the six great nobles toward war to become something lighthearted.

Because they would undoubtedly win when it came to it. It made them arrogant.

The other heads had their own stance in regard to this matter, but none of them regarded it with the importance that it deserved.

「We have a bigger problem than that aren't we? We still haven't obtained any orb this year.」

「It's a waste of time to discuss a mere third rate country like Hohlfahrt.」

「Just pay them some reparations along with apology. If they're still complaining even after that then we can just shut them up with war.」

The other heads wanted to move to the next topic, but Albergue's gaze caught a name that was written in the report.

「—Leon huh.」

Fernand talked to Albergue.

「Is something the matter, acting chairman?」

「No, it's nothing. More importantly, there is a demand to return the airship that was forcefully taken. Lord Lambert, do you have any problem with that?」

There was an implicit demand in that question to return the airship seeing as it was just a single ship, but Lambert was clearly shaken up by that.

「N-no, I'm afraid I can't do that. It was a sacred match that was done under the oath to the sacred tree. There is no need for my son to give back an airship that he won fair and square!」

Both Albergue and Fernand were curious with Lambert's reaction, but the other heads weren't interested at all. Because of that they couldn't question him further.

「Acting chairman, we don't have much time. Let's talk about the other agendas already.」

Loic's father, the head of Barriere House urged Albergue to move on with it already. So Albergue decided to move on to the next topic.

(I guess it'll be pointless to talk about this further.)

「Then, the next agenda is about the orb. This year not even one orb has—」

The matter regarding Hohlfahrt Kingdom was casually brushed off in the assembly meeting.

# ***Chapter 7 – The Descendants of Adventurers***

## ***Part 1***

A packet from Leon arrived to the academy in Hohlfahrt Kingdom.

The recipients for it were Ange and Livia.

「That Leon, just when I wondered why he didn't contact us for a while, he sent us souvenir like this instead.」

When they happily opened the box, they found things like tea leaves or female-oriented products. It was just like Leon to send them this kind of things.

There were also letters inside. Livia got surprised when she read the letter for her.

「Ange, it looks like Leon-san got into trouble there. He wrote that he wanted us to hand his letter to his majesty and the queen!」

「What?」

Ange read the letter too. There were a few words about how he loves the two of them before he wrote about there was a problem occurring in the commonwealth.



In order to deal with the problem, the letter asked them to hand some letters to Roland and Mylene.

Creare was floating inside the room looking lonely. Ange turned her gaze toward it.

『—There is no souvenir for me. Even though I've been working so hard for master's sake.』

「Creare, have you heard anything? Previously Leon would contact us with mail through you, why didn't he do so this time?」

『There is no word from Luxion so I also don't know. Perhaps something happened?』

Ange placed her hand on her mouth and fell into thought.

「Something happened? What's the reason Leon intentionally wrote two letters like this? I'm also curious why he isn't giving us any more explanation.」

Livia took the letters inside the packet with a troubled look.

「Should we read them?」

「I want to, but Leon intentionally prepared them separately. There must be meaning in it. I will deliver these letters right away.」

Creare was spinning around in the air.

『H~m, I wonder? This is master we're talking about, so perhaps there isn't any deep meaning to it. Surely master separated the letters into one that is full of complaints to Roland while the other is a love letter to Mylene where master is trying to act cool.』

Expression vanished from Livia's face while she looked at the two letters.

「That'll be a bit problematic if that's the case.」

Ange laughed.

「I'll want to praise him instead if he has the guts to write a love letter to the queen while he already has two fiancées. What's more he is asking me to be the one delivering that letter. —That's very promising.」

She was laughing, but she was making a face that showed how she absolutely wasn't amused at all in the inside.

Creare tried to defend Leon a bit.

『It's impossible for that indecisive master to do something like that. In any case, perhaps I also should make some preparations just in case something happens over there.』

「What do you mean by preparations?」

Livia asked. Creare answered her in delight.

『Do you want to know? Then I'll tell you. Actually there are these spare parts for master's Einhorn lying around. They can be used to create a second ship. The second ship of Einhorn class—let's see, should I call it Licorne? Also, actually there is this interesting device among the things we collected. I want to install it into the airship too.』

「I, is that so?」

Livia couldn't follow what Creare was talking about so happily. After Creare finished talking, Livia handed the two letters to Ange.

「Let's send them quickly. —I hope nothing bad happens to Leon.」

## Part 2

I think the packet that I sent to the kingdom should have arrived around this time.

As for me, I was taking several days off from the academy.

I had no interest to go there just to get bullied. The academy also wasn't saying anything to me.

I came to Marie's mansion in one of those days off and talked with Brad.

「Sorry. I've caused you a lot of trouble.」

「You're recovering quickly for someone so heavily injured.」

「This is thanks to Marie healing me every night. I feel bad for everyone, but this is what they called side benefit.」

「I don't want to hear you going on about your love affair.」

「Oh, that's too bad.」

He must be feeling better already if he could make this kind of talk, but his current condition still cut a sorry figure.

According to Marie, 「It was really dangerous. He only barely made it even with my healing magic」 .

It made it clear just how merciless Pierre and his gang were.

「—Brad, are the guys who did this to you strong?」

When I broached the main topic, Brad made a slightly troubled face.

「If I can be honest, I thought they were weak at first. They were weaker than even me in close-quarter combat, and even their skill in magic was crude. I thought that there is no way I'll lose to them.」

Brad's specialty wasn't in close-quarter combat. He was weaker than even me in that.

For them to be even weaker than Brad, was the nobles of Alzer alright?

「They used magic in the middle, so I also used magic back. But midway I became unable to use magic.」

「You couldn't use magic? It wasn't because of a blunder in your part?」

「It felt like the magic reaction was suddenly gone. Even though the magic should activate without problem, at that time it felt like something forcefully stopped the process. In exchange the power from the magic of that guy called Pierre shot through the roof. He freely controlled plants that grew out from the ground. If he is a magician than he is very high leveled, but he didn't look anything like that from his appearance. It was really puzzling.」

「Was his right hand glowing?」

「Right hand? Now that you mentioned it, there was some kind of glowing crest on his hand. It didn't look like magic circle but—as I thought, is there some kind of secret there?」

Brad didn't seem to know about the divine protection of the sacred tree.

「I see. Well, I'm glad I can ask you about all these. For now just focus on getting better.」

「Bartfalt—are you perhaps, scheming something?」

Brad asked me just when I was about to leave the room.

「Why do you think that?」

「It's not like you to just accept this situation and stay quiet. If you're really planning something, then the only thing I can say is that I have this feeling that they are still hiding something.」

「—I'll be careful. Get better quickly.」

When I left the room, there was Marie standing in the corridor hugging a single notebook.

.

## **Part 3**

Marie got dark circles under her eyes. She handed me a single notebook.

It seemed she was writing in this notebook for the whole night. After handing the book to me, Marie talked without looking at my face.

「I-I wrote everything that I can remember into that notebook.」

I wanted to tell her that she should work this hard right from the start, but I found several interesting information when I took a brief look at the book.

「—Seems like you've been working hard.」

「I did my best!」

There was a lot of information here compared to before we arrived in Alzer. Looked like she went all out to make an appeal that she was doing her best.

For example, there was information regarding the oath to the sacred tree.

By swearing an oath to the sacred tree, one could draw out more power than usual from the sacred tree.

The practical application of that was for something like the unreasonable duel that Pierre forced on Marie and others.

And then the notebook also mentioned about the crests that the sacred tree bestowed.

The guardian's crest was the strongest, followed by the priestess. Then below them was the crest of the six great nobles.

The note kept mentioning other crests below that. The status of these crests also influenced the standing of the nobles that had them.

They were nobles because the sacred tree recognized them—it was really easy to understand.

「—There are interesting information here.」

There was also information that could be used for taking revenge to Pierre written here.

「B-big bro, what are you going to do now?」

Marie asked me anxiously, so I answered her with a smile.

I teased her too much that she became this fearful now, so I tried to reassure her.

「What am I going to do? That's obvious. I'll make Pierre pay. I'll also need to teach Alzer their place while I'm at it. I'll tell them firmly, don't keep getting cocky.」

I couldn't just run away home like this.

After all the danger to the world was still remaining as before.

But, even though I was trying to reassure her, Marie was starting to tremble fiercely instead.

Tears gathered in her eyes and she kept repeating 「I'm sorry. I'm sorry. I'm sorry」 .

—Why is she reacting like this!?

Julius saw Marie trembling in front of me and ran toward us.

「Marie, are you alright!?」

「So you show up, you stupid prince.」

After I said that with a weary expression, Julius pulled Marie to behind him.

「Bartfalt, certainly this situation is also our responsibility. But, stop cornering Marie like this! If you have something to say then say it to me!」

What a manly prince.

If I was a girl then surely my heart would throb—no, I guess it wouldn't.

「I see. Then I shall ask you to work.」

「W-what?」

Next it was Jilk who showed up.

「Your highness! Marie-san too, both of you are safe!」

「Yosh, you come too green head.」

「Eh?」

After that Chris who didn't wear anything above his waist peered into the corridor curiously after hearing the commotion.

He was sweaty. Perhaps he had just been practicing swinging.

「What is going on?」

I looked at Chris while thinking which would be better, Greg or him.

I concluded to leave Greg behind because he wasn't here anyway.

「Yosh, I'll take you too blue head. Marie, I'll borrow these three.」

After I said that, the three of them spoke angrily 「Just what are you talking about!?」 , but Marie nodded. She looked like she didn't mind if that was all I'm asking.

「I don't mind but, what are you going to do?」

「M-Marie!?」

I ignored the shocked trio and tapped the rolled up notebook on my shoulder.

「I'm going to raid the commonwealth's dungeon. It's treasure hunt.」

Marie's eyes brightened when I said that.

「Treasure!」

Julius and others also had the same reaction.

Even rotten like this, they were still descendants of adventurers.

Their mood brightened when they heard the word treasure and they looked excited.

「I don't know what you're planning but, there's no way I can't just stay quiet after hearing the word treasure.」

「Your highness, let's quickly prepare.」

Jilk was also looking really motivated unlike just now.

Even Chris looked like a kid before an outing.

「I'll prepare the sword I have been keeping in secret. Bartfalt, when will we depart?」

—These guys are looking excited. I envy them.

「Wait for a bit. I'll make some preparation in the academy. I also want to secure a guide for us from there.」

Marie tilted her head and asked me.

「Guide?」

「There is this teacher who is an expert of Alzer's dungeon right?」

.

## **Part 4**

When I came to the academy after not coming for several days, the students and even the teachers looked shocked before they averted their gazes from me.

I understood well that the six great nobles were holding great influence in the academy.

Because of that I was walking right in the middle of the corridor.

Everyone on my way stepped aside and opened the path. It made me feel a bit better.

「Now then, where is this Mr. Narcisse?」

My objective for coming to the academy was to make a request to Mr. Narcisse.

Narcisse was a capture target in the second game and the only teacher among the targets.

He was a teacher who loved to investigate dungeons and ruins. In the academy he had a class that put importance in field work.

The class was an optional special class. The person was more of a scholar than a teacher.

He wanted to live as an archeologist, but he was unable to live freely because he came from the six great nobles.

He was also a teacher who gave his help to the main character in that game.

Then I should ask him to help me.

I was walking toward the special classroom. Midway I accidentally came across Louise-san.

「Leon-kun!?」

I waved my hand to the surprised Louise-san.

「Long time no see. It was a disaster~, my airship got taken by Pierre.」

After I said that casually without much seriousness in my tone, Louise-san's gaze turned sharp.

「—Come over here.」

She grabbed my arm and led me to an empty classroom.

「Just what happened? I wanted to ask about the story in detail, but none of you came to the academy. In addition even Noelle stopped coming. Are these two things related?」

Louise-san asked me for explanation, so I explained it simply.

「That scum Pierre stole my ship using this oath to the sacred tree thing. As for Noelle, apparently Loic came to her bringing a collar and blabbered about love or whatever, so she took refuge in my house.」

Louise-san looked somewhat relieved knowing that Noelle was alright.

「I see—then, I'll talk to father. Just leave these matters of Noelle and Loic to me.」

This villainess was more caring than I thought.

Setting that aside.

「Please don't. As things are we will keep getting underestimated. Even though I look like this I'm the hero of the kingdom, while Brad who was injured is the former heir of a prestigious noble house in

the kingdom. —There is also the former crown prince among the people who got marked with the crest among their neck by that scum Pierre.]

When I remembered the crest collar that was engraved on Marie's neck—I felt irritated.

Louise-san's expression stiffened slightly.

「—I understand your feeling. But Pierre is also from the six great nobles. He isn't an opponent that you can win against.]

I listed a lot of reasons, but to be honest not one of them was my true reason.

「Let me rephrase it. I can't forgive that bastard for picking a fight with me. That's why I'll make him go through something horrible. To do that, can you help me a little?」

I tried asking because I got nothing to lose, but Louise-san unexpectedly agreed after worrying for a while.

「—I wish that you won't do anything dangerous though.]

「I'm used with fighting even though I look like this.]

「—I see. Then, what do you want me to help with?]」

「Please introduce me to someone. Also—」

Louise-san looked really surprised when she heard my second request.

.

## Part 5

I was shown to the building where the special classroom was located.

There, I found teacher Narcisse Calse Granze sleeping on a sofa inside a place that seemed to be a preparation room.

The preparation room was largely crammed with documents. There were few places to step on.

Louise-san who brought me here looked exasperated and knocked the door loudly to wake up Mr. Narcisse.

「Are you awake, Mr. Narcisse.」

Mr. Narcisse sat up hearing that sound. His hair style was a simple one where his gray hair was left to flow behind.

He got stubble on his face while his shirt was wrinkled and stained.

He was tall and slender but with muscles on his body.

His appearance was a bit worn out, but this teacher was handsome enough.

He put on the glasses that was placed on the low table before looking our way.

「Oh, Louise. It's unusual for you to come to this kind of place.」

The two of them were apparently acquainted.

「I came bringing a guest today.」

「A guest for me?」

I greeted Mr. Narcisse.

「Nice to meet you. I am Leon, an overseas student. Mr. Narcisse, actually I wish to consult you about dungeon—」

Mr. Narcisse suddenly got up from the sofa while I was talking and hugged me.

「I've been waiting, adventurer!」

「Ha? Eh?」

Mr. Narcisse who was reeking of alcohol strongly hugged me while I was in confusion.

Louise-san forcefully separated me away from Mr. Narcisse.

「Narcisse, what are you doing!？」

Louise-san stopped treating him like a teacher, but Mr. Narcisse paid it no mind at all.

「No, I apologize. I was looking forward to it when I heard that overseas students from the kingdom would come here this year. After all I heard that the students in the kingdom's academy are all adventurer. I was hoping that you will be able to help me in exploring dungeons.」

Looks like he was a person who would become high-tensioned when it was about his hobby.

「More importantly Mr. Narcisse, you are going to have spare time for a while aren't you?」

「Hm? Well, I guess. I had just returned from a ruin after all. But the academy might be lecturing me if I don't hold a class soon.」

「——The number of student who wish to take your class is zero you know? You should take care of that problem first before figuring out when to hold a class.」

「Eh, is that true? What a problem. Even though I could only continue being archaeologist because I'm a academy teacher」

It seemed he was a very easygoing person.

He also seemed uninformed about the situation in the academy.

「Forget about that Mr. Narcisse. Can you listen to what I have to say?」

「Ah, wait. I'll prepare some tea first. If I remember right, there should be a tea set around here——」

Mr. Narcisse fell down inside the room after saying that. Then he got buried under a mountain of documents.

「——H-help」

I looked toward Louise-san.

「This person, he is really from the six great nobles right?」

「That's right. The eccentric Narcisse. He often got made fun of among the young generations, but I heard that he excelled as a scholar.」

When I looked at Mr. Narcisse who was buried under the documents, I could certainly see why he was called an eccentric.

We helped Mr. Narcisse out of the mountain of papers.

.

## Part 6

I explained about what had happened until now to Mr. Narcisse after digging him out.

Mr. Narcisse made a pained look when he heard about Pierre.

「What should I say here, what happened was truly inexcusable. Let me apologize to you as a fellow six great nobles.」

「Could nothing be done about Pierre? From what I heard, he has been a problem student like this from a long time ago.」

Mr. Narcisse looked troubled from my obvious question.

「We introduced ourselves as six great nobles, but each of them is like a royal family of their respective domain. This might sound like exaggeration but, it might be perceived as interference to the affairs of another country if I give him a warning.」

Perhaps it couldn't be helped because the commonwealth was a gathering of countries that gathered under the sacred tree?

Well, it wasn't really my business.

「I'll take care of Pierre. Putting that aside, can you help with the other matter?」

「—You mean about exploring the dungeon in Lespinasse territory? I'll be happy to do so, but it will be very dangerous. In Alzer, the closer the dungeon is to the sacred tree, the more dangerous it tends to be. The dungeons in Lespinasse territory that is right beside the sacred tree are all dungeons with high difficulty.」

「There is no problem.」

Louise-san seemed to be worried for me.

「I wish that you won't do anything dangerous though. It seems you have confidence, but it's not good to be overconfident.」

—It would be great if this person was really my big sister.

If it was my big sister Jena or my little sister Finley here, the most they would say would be 「Don't forget to bring back souvenir」 .

I felt like crying.

「W-what's wrong!? Why are you crying, Leon-kun?」

「No, I just feel that it's wonderful there is a girl who will give me such kind words.」

Right now I had Ange and Livia, but that one year I spent in the kingdom's academy was really horrible.

—It was really horrible.

I wiped my tears with my sleeve while asking Mr. Narcisse to be our guide in the dungeon.

「Will you accept my request?」

Mr. Narcisse folded his arms and looked like he thought about various things—then he nodded.

「Got it. I'll be your guide. However, I'll have you pay me the promised reward properly. Recently I'm troubled because I don't have enough research fund.」

「Please don't worry. I will pay you the proper reward. After all the dungeons in the commonwealth is reputed to be profitable. I'm looking forward to it.」

I was really looking forward to it.

This would be a good chance to secure a lot of resources, like the magic stones with exportable quality.

I could also make those five idiots work with this.

「Then let's depart immediately.」

「—Eh?」

I grabbed Mr. Narcisse's arm with a smile and made him stood. I then dragged him with me right away.

Before I left, I turned a smile toward the astonished Louise-san.

「Please help me with that other thing too when we return.」

「Y-yes.」

Then I left the room with a faint smile on my lips.

—Pierre, I'll make you regret making me angry.

.

## Part 7

The location was the academy's courtyard.

There were many lovers who spent their lunch time there.

Lelia was having lunch together with her lover Emile, but from her expression she looked distracted.

The reason was her big sister Noelle.

(Just where have she gone to)

She was worried for Noelle who didn't come back. She was also annoyed at the same time.

(Even though she just needs to go out with Loic immediately, what is she hesitating for?)

Emile was worried seeing Lelia's distracted look and talked to her.

「Lelia, Noelle-san still haven't returned home yet?」

Lelia smiled toward the kind Emile.

「Ye, yeah. I think she is alright though. But I wish that she would tell me where she is staying at least.」

Then Emile made a worried face.

「There are many troubles recently after all. I want to believe that even Pierre won't do anything horrible to Noelle-san in consideration of Loic.」

「You're right. This is because big sis is stubborn. Even though all the problems will go away if only she go out with Loic.」

Lelia was trying to get her big sister Noelle hitched with Loic.

In order to make that happened, she did various things like giving Loic advices. Emotionally she was Loic's ally.

「—But, recently Loic is somewhat strange. It feels like he has this scary aura around him.」

Emile was feeling danger from Loic, but Lelia didn't agree with him.

「Really? I think he is just impatient because things don't go that well with big sis, but he isn't that scary. Though it's a problem that her desire to monopolize is a bit strong.」

Emile made a conflicted face at Lelia's words.

「It'll be great if it's really just a bit. —Eh?」

Emile took off his gaze from Lelia toward Leon who was pulling Narcisse's arm at the distance.

「It's unusual to see the overseas student coming to school. Where is he planning to bring Mr. Narcisse?」

Emile was looking puzzled. In contrast Lelia's eyes widened and she stared at Leon in fixation.

She dropped the bread that was her lunch, but she didn't even notice it.

「—Those guys」

## **Part 8**

I dragged Mr. Narcisse to a cave in former Lespinasse territory that was also a dungeon.

We boarded a small ship to come here. When we arrived at the entrance, I removed the plank that had the writing ‘forbidden to enter’.

I had properly asked for permission.

You could enter even the restricted dungeon if you brought up the name of a six great nobles. It was convenient.

It was what I brought Mr. Narcisse for.

「What refreshing weather! This is the perfect day for an adventure!」

「Indeed your highness!」

Julius was high-tensioned from the morning. Agreeing with him was Jilk who had a rifle on his back.

Mr. Narcisse who was dragged here half forcefully looked up to the sky while carrying a large rucksack on his back.

「No, today the sky is cloudy.」

Julius kept smiling even after hearing Mr. Narcisse’s retort.

「It’s the problem of feeling, teacher.」

「No, you were talking about weather just now weren’t you!?」

What a happy-go-lucky bunch.

As for Chris, he was comparing several swords that he brought here. He was hesitating to choose which sword to bring.

「As I thought perhaps it should be this one? No, it's hard to discard this one too. Eei! Then I'll bring them both!」

—Are these guys misunderstanding dungeon exploration as a picnic?

I wished they would think about my feeling for having to lead this bunch of idiots.

「Let's go in already if you guys are finished with the equipment check.」

I was bringing a device that looked like a smartphone with me. I used it to confirm the map of the area.

There was a bit of noise running on the screen. It might be due to the influence of the sacred tree.

「Oh, the kingdom has some strange tool.」

Mr. Narcisse peered onto my device.

「Aa~, this thing is a lost item. I'm using it because it's handy.」

「Lost item! That's amazing. Please let me take a look at it.」

「It'll broke if you disassemble it so better not. Anyway, let's get inside the dungeon already.」

I was carrying a shotgun and a heavy rucksack.

Mr. Narcisse looked puzzled seeing that.

「Leon-kun, why are you bringing explosive with you?」

We tilted our head hearing that question.

「Eh, it's necessary isn't it?」

「We also have the proper knowledge of explosive so please don't worry. We won't allow the treasure to be damaged.」

The one who agreed with me was Jilk who was also skilled in handling explosive.

「No, the interior of a dungeon is also a part of the ruin! You must not use explosive inside such place!」

Chris laughed.

「It'll be fine. We will keep the destruction to the minimum. The value of the treasure will decrease if it got damaged after all.」

「By value you mean the historical value right!? Do you guys really understand how important the ruin here!?」

I laughed while persuading Mr. Narcisse.

「Please leave it to me. I will stop them if they go too far. Besides, this time our objective is more of something else rather than the ruin.」

My objective was a key item that originally didn't have any effect in the game.

It was a necessary item for the story progression. It had no value at all as a tool in the game.

But, it would become an item with absurd value when it was in reality.

「Something else?」

Mr. Narcisse was confused, but I ignored him and entered the dungeon.

「It's dungeon exploration in Alzer. Put some spirit into it you guys!」

After I raised my voice, Julius, Jilk, and Chris also raised a gallant yell in respond.

「Will it really be fine?」

Mr. Narcisse hung his head down seeing us acting like that.

# **Chapter 8 – Sacred Tree’s Sapling**

.

## **Part 1**

At the palace of Hohlfahrt Kingdom.

The king of the country Roland was drinking tea elegantly there.

「—The taste of tea that is drank when people around me are working hard taste special.」

He was making a scummy statement with a radiant smile while sunlight was showering him from the window.

「You’re a trash like usual.」

Roland replied to Mylene’s remark with over reaction.

「Indeed, it’s just as you say. It’s sad just how useless I am. By the way, have you finished your work?」

He said that he was sad, but he was joyful at the inside.

That was the man named Roland.

The scum king who was in hate-hate relationship with Leon and would exchange many blows with each other within the permissible boundary.

「There is a letter from Leon-kun who is studying abroad. Ange came to directly hand it to me because it mentioned about an urgent matter. There is also a letter for you.」

「From that brat? It will be filled with disparagement toward me anyway. I don't want to read it, so you read it and tell me what it said. Ah, that's right. Tell me if there is any insulting word. I'll send him to the gallows with that justification.」

Mylene looked coldly at Roland after he joked like that.

「Perhaps it will be you who get sent to the gallows.」

「It'll be fine. That brat is too naïve. He won't go as far as sending me to the gallows.」

Perhaps the two of them were birds of a feather with how he was able to completely predict Leon like this.

「Good grief—」

Mylene broke the seal and read the letter. Her expression turned serious while she was reading.

「So? It's just a trivial matter just as I said, right? Obviously that brat has too much free time in his hand, that was why he prepared this letter to make fun of me.」

Roland had one-sidedly decided what the letter was about, but Mylene's next words immediately sent him into distress.

「—Dear, the letter said that there is a dispute with Faiviel House of the six great nobles.」

「What!？」

Roland stood up from his chair and spilled the tea. Even while he yelled 「Hot!」, he snatched the letter from Mylene and read the content.

『To my beloved king, is there any sickness ailing your majesty there? As for me, I am in an extremely healthy condition while praying everyday so that your majesty will be of ill health. Now then, my purpose of sending this letter is to mention that the second son of Faiviel House, Pierre-kun has picked a fight with me. And so I'm thinking to take him up on it. However, I think it will cause various troubles later on, so please take care of dealing with the aftermath.』

Roland's hand that was holding the letter was trembling.

「T-that shitty brat! What the hell is he doing thereee!」

The letter also continued like this.

『PS I received a letter from your majesty that mentioned this  
『Take care of the troublesome matter well.』, and so I shall take care of the troublesome Alzer Commonwealth well. Please take care of the aftermath (lol) By The retainer who is more than your majesty deserves』

Roland tore the letter into pieces.

「That feeeenddd!! I'll send him to the gallows for real! —Mylene, gather the important officials immediately! After that send people to the commonwealth in order to investigate the situation. It will become a disaster if we don't stop that—oi, why is your face red?」

「Eh?」

Mylene was shocked by the content of Roland's letter, so she read the letter that was addressed to her. It made her cheeks blushed red.

She hid Leon's letter for her from Roland.

「I-it's a secret.」

Mylene said that shyly. Roland felt turned off seeing that.

「Secret? That's cute, but how about you watch your age first before saying that? —Hidebuh!」

Roland who spoke his feeling honestly got slapped in the face.

.

## **Part 2**

We finally arrived at Alzer's dungeon!

We were inside a cave, but the space here was truly strange.

There was moss growing on the ground and walls. There were holes at the ceiling where light shined in.

The inside of the cave became a labyrinth where plants that were never seen before were growing naturally.

There were also plants with rounded flower petals that emitted warm light.

The dungeon here gave a different impression from the dungeon in Hohlfahrt Kingdom. It felt like we were inside a forest.

In such place we were—.

「Incoming. From the front, distance 300! Six of them!」

—I put the device into my pocket and readied my shotgun, but Jilk moved ahead of me.

「Please allow me to hold them back.」

He aimed his rifle and fired at the monsters heading our way.

It was a bolt-action rifle. He ejected the bullet cartridge, loaded the next bullet, and aimed.

He peered into the rifle's scope and fired at the next target.

「Jilk, leave some for us!」

Julius stepped forward. Chris also didn't want to be left behind and moved to the front.

「Leave them to me. Your highness, please stay back.」

The enemies looked like centipede. They closed the distance by crawling on the wall and ceiling toward us.

I changed position so that my line of fire wouldn't be hindered by the two who stepped forward and observed the battle.

Julius slashed a monster that assaulted him from the ceiling when it was still in the air. The monster immediately let out black smoke when it fell on the ground and vanished.

During that time Chris had cut down three monsters.

—These guys are getting more and more superhuman.

「Yosh, let's take a little break after I confirmed the safety of this area.」

I took out my device and checked the map. The distance until we reached our objective was still very far.

Mr. Narcisse applauded our performance.

「That was amazing. I heard that the kingdom is the home of the adventurers, but this surpassed my imagination. Even the monsters just now shouldn't be weak by any means, but you guys took care of them like they were not a big deal.」

Julius who only defeated one displayed his confidence pointlessly.

「It wasn't much. We can take cares enemies of this level even if there are ten or twenty of them.」

No, I would run away if there was that many.

「I see. Then you fight them alone if that happen. I'll run away at that time.」

「Bartfalt, you're really an unpleasant fellow.」

「Are you an idiot? If there is a place where there are twenty of them, then you set up a trap and lure them there.」

Mr. Narcisse looked dejected at my remark.

「Don't set up trap in this dungeon. There is an important ruin sleeping here, and it's also close with the sacred tree.」

Sometimes we would find a place where a root of the sacred tree protruded out inside the cave.

The root would be really big it looked like a wall, or we would think it was a floor—this dungeon was really amazing.

Julius's eyes sparkled in excitement.

「An important ruin you said? —Bartfalt, can we take a look at it for a bit?」

Chris's glasses also glinted mysteriously.

「Greg is really unlucky. He can't have adventure in this kind of dungeon and got to stay behind.」

But Jilk seemed a bit dissatisfied by that.

「But, he is now doing things together with Marie-san alone in exchange.」

These guys, just what did they like from Marie?

Mr. Narcisse was moved from hearing our talk.

「As I thought the young men of the kingdom are great. You all are interested with archaeology, what's more you all are also skilled adventurers who can be relied on in the dungeon.」

—This person, he is misunderstanding these guys.

「Mr. Narcisse, do you think that they are interested with archaeology?」

「Is that not the case?」

「Everyone here is savage with me as the exception.」

Julius glared at me after I said that.

「That's rude!」

「Is it? Answer me this then Julius, what will you do if you find a door blocking your way when you know there is a treasure behind it? Assume that the door is also a part of the ruin and has historical value.」

「That's easy—I'll destroy the door and take the treasure!」

Mr. Narcisse yelled at that answer.

「Wait! The door is also a part of the ruin you know!?」

It was Jilk who gave the laughing Julius a follow up.

「Please don't worry. In such situation I will use explosive to blow up the door cleanly from its hinges. It also won't harm the other part of the ruin.」

「No, you mustn't use explosive at all from the start!」

Chris shook his head in exasperation and started talking like he was different from these two.

「Both your highness and Jilk are too extreme. You just need to destroy the key to open the door.」

It looked like even Mr. Narcisse could run out of patience.

「Don't even think about destroying it from the start! Even the treasure is also a valuable research material. Why are all of you focused on the idea of taking the treasure away!?」

The three went 「Eh?」 with shocked faces. I looked at them and laughed in ridicule.

「Now do you understand teacher? These guys are savages.」

「Then, what will you do if it's you Count Bartfalt?」

Jilk asked me. I told them 「I'm different from you guys」 . Hearing that Mr. Narcisse also nodded while saying 「Leon-kun, I know that you get it」 .

「Obviously you need to take away only the treasure inside without destroying the door so that you don't leave any proof.」

Julius, Jilk, and Chris laughed after hearing that.

「You've got us there!」

「Indeed.」

「Umu, that's truly the best way.」

Really, it was difficult when dealing with idiots.

「Eh, what's wrong Mr. Narcisse? Why are you crouching and holding your head like that?」

Mr. Narcisse muttered.

「—Leon-kun, you're the most horrible one here.」

Is that so?

I tilted my head in puzzlement. Julius shook his head seeing my reaction and said to me.

「Bartfalt, he means that you are more savage than us—or perhaps I should say more reckless than us.」

「Why?」

「A normal adventurer won't challenge a dungeon alone in order to obtain a Lost Item.」

Jilk talked about my exploit while laughing. Mr. Narcisse lifted up his head hearing that.

「Did you say Lost Item? Leon-kun, could it be that you have other Lost Item!?」

Chris folded his arms and nodded several times.

「You must mean Partner. It was a good ship.」

「W-was? Eh, wait. Did something happen?」

Seeing Chris thrusting the cruel reality toward Mr. Narcisse made me felt pity toward him.

「It went down in war.」

「Why!? Why did you use a precious Lost Item in war!? Do you understand just how precious it is archeologically? Before even talking about that, how can you talk about its destruction so casually like that!? Leon-kun, explain to me in detail just what happened!」

‘A precious treasure of mankind was-!’ Mr. Narcisse lamented in grief. Seeing him like that made me unable to say how Partner had actually gotten pulled up and now it was in the middle of repair or

how it had no archaeological value seeing that it had only gotten constructed recently.

And so I laughed to gloss over it.

「Hahaha! —Now then, break is over. Let's go deeper.」

「—Hohlfahrt people is horrible.」

It wasn't convincing when it was someone from the commonwealth who said it.

.

## **Part 3**

Around that time.

Greg who stayed behind came to a library with Marie.

He stayed behind as Marie's bodyguard, but as expected he was regretting that he missed the chance to challenge a dungeon.

「Haa—I wanted to go with them too. Why do I have to stay behind? If he is already bringing those three then he should bring me too.」

Greg was saying that inside the quiet library while flipping the pages of a book in boredom. Then Marie asked him a question.

「Greg, what is the meaning of this word?」

Marie was reading books that were written in the commonwealth's language. She would search through dictionary if she found a word that she didn't understand.

But, sometimes there would be technical term too that it would be too hard to understand it using dictionary alone.

Even Greg was a former noble heir.

He received the best education since childhood and he was also knowledgeable with the commonwealth's language.

「Aa, this one's meaning is~~」

Marie thanked him after he taught her.

「Thank you.」

「Marie, you are still continuing? I heard that recently you aren't even sleeping much. Cara and Kyle are worried you know?」

Marie returned her gaze from the worried Greg back to the book. She looked like she had no intention to take a break.

「It's not enough with just this. I have to investigate a lot more.」

Marie had been working really hard since the day Brad got seriously injured.

Seeing that made Greg thought.

(I can't be the only one rotting uselessly like this. Guess I'll lend a hand, for Marie's sake, and also for taking revenge for Brad.)

And so Greg started proactively giving support to Marie's effort.

.

## **Part 4**

Inside the dungeon.

The path that was shown by my device's screen was blocked by a tree root that looked like a cliff.

It was so big we needed to look up. It looked difficult to climb.

「It will be better to take a detour rather than climbing this.」

Mr. Narcisse looked up to the cliff and recommended going through another route.

But that would take too much time.

I turned my gaze toward Chris. He seemed to guess what I want to say already.

「Looks like it's my turn.」

Chris put down his rucksack and took out various tools like rope from there.

「Then, I'm going!」

「Do your best~」

Chris started climbing the cliff by himself with a smile. I cheered him on.

Mr. Narcisse's reaction had gone past surprise into exasperation seeing Chris doing that.

「—You guys can do anything.」

Julius acted like it was only natural.

「Something like this is indispensable skill for us. Even I and Bartfalt can do this.」

This useless prince, why is he speaking with me as the comparison?

I asked Mr. Narcisse.

「The academy's students can't do this?」

「The direction of our education policy is different from the kingdom, so you can't compare them using such standard. Alzer students aren't as tough as you four. Well, I think students who can keep up with you four can be counted in one hand.」

Chris reached the top while we were talking and waved his hand toward us.

It seemed there was no danger.

「Come, let's climb up too.」

Our distance until our destination was reduced a lot by climbing this cliff.

But, it was difficult to obtain a key item as expected.

「There are a lot of monsters.」

I muttered while looking at my device. Jilk peered to look at the screen too.

「You can see the enemy's position with that? Since when you have this kind of tool?」

「—I got it just a little while ago.」

「Is that so? Then what about the small ship that we used to come here? Since when you managed to secure something like that?」

「I once used it before Einhorn got stolen. It was lucky that I hadn't returned it yet.」

I was giving vague answers while picking a spot to set up a trap.

「Now then, there are a lot of enemies so let's set up a trap.」

「So you'll still use trap. Don't forget to remove it properly after that.」

Mr. Narcisse spoke in resignation.

I immediately searched for a spot where it would be advantageous to face a lot of enemies and set up a trap there.

It was Jilk who specialized in this kind of underhanded method.

「Are you perhaps thinking disgraceful thought about me?」

Jilk was staring fixedly at me while I was setting up trap, but I didn't go easy on this guy who had committed something he should feel guilty about.

「I'm just thinking that this work fit your personality perfectly. Your skill to plant a bomb using big sis was marvelous.」

「Kuh! —I can't say anything back to that.」

「Come on, let's set this up quickly.」

After we finished setting up the trap, we needed to decide who would be the bait.

And so I placed my hand on Julius's shoulder.

「Julius, I have a job that can only be done by you.」

「Bartfalt, so you finally recognized my worth. Tell me anything. I'll show you how to have it done perfectly.」

Good to know—Julius, you were going to make yourself useful for me too.

.

## **Part 5**

「BARTFALTTTTT! I'LL NEVER FORGET THISSSSS!!」

Julius was running inside the dungeon. He aimed his handgun to behind him and fired.

One of his shots pierced through a monster's head and it turned into a black smoke.

But the number of the monster attacking him was over a hundred.

It would be more difficult to miss in this situation. Julius desperately ran toward the trap's location.

He was running on the ground that was fully covered by moss. He paid attention to not get tripped on tree roots that sometimes appeared.

He was running away from the monsters while recalling Leon's face.

「As I thought it was a mistake to trust that guy!」

He never imagined that he would be used as bait.

He heard Jilk's voice when he finally arrived at the meeting point.

「Your highness, don't stop running and run through!」

Jilk used his rifle to shot through a large caterpillar monster that leaped toward Julius. It turned into black smoke and vanished.

Julius did as he was told and ran through that spot. Leon was waiting there for him.

「You did good work, prince.」

Leon was holding up his shotgun. A magic circle was floating in front of its muzzle.

Julius didn't stop running until he passed him. Leon pulled the trigger after Julius ran through.

「Here, explode!」

When the shotgun's bullet passed the magic circle, it attacked the monsters with trail of light following behind it.

The bullet that was strengthened with lightning element penetrated through many monsters and blew them away.

Julius sat down on the spot while breathing hard. He looked behind him.

「H-high difficulty magic? Bartfalt, when did you learn it?」

Leon answered his question without looking at him.

「I'm just learning the convenient magic spells. I can't use any other high difficult magic than this.」

Leon just used a magic that could only be used by Brad among them. Seeing that Julius thought.

(This guy, won't he be more amazing than us if he put in a serious effort?)

Because Leon didn't have the motivation, his grade was always slightly above average.

But if he got serious, wouldn't he manage to obtain a grade that was equal—no, a result that was even better than them?

Julius was thinking that, but he wiped his sweat and rethought it while getting on his feet.

(No, in this guy's case he is prioritizing the result more than his own personal strength.)

He explored a dungeon alone and obtained a Lost Item.

He played an active role in the war against the principality and produced a great result.

What was amazing from Leon was more of that result rather than his own personal strength. Julius became convinced of that.

(He is the type to reduce his effort while obtaining the best result.)

Then the open space that he passed through exploded and gray smoke blew toward them.

The surrounding got covered with smoke.

He heard Leon's voice.

「—Yosh, it's over. The next one will be the main event.」

.

## **Part 6**

When we arrived at the destination, that place was the only spot with wide open space.

There was a large hole at the ceiling even though we were inside a dungeon. Sunlight was shining in from there.

It was a wondrous place. A very large lump of magic stones and metals were protruding out from the ground.

Those treasures were sparkling from light reflection. Deeper inside the place was—a very large and hairy monster.

It had the characteristics of several animals. Its nose looked like elephant's nose.

There were large horns growing out from both sides of its forehead.

Even though it was hairy, its tail was like a lizard tail. When the monster stood up there were sharp claws on its large hands.

Mr. Narcisse yelled as soon as he saw the monster.

「Chimera Beast—why is something troublesome like this is here? D-don't tell me!」

Mr. Narcisse was getting excited by himself. He was saying 「A place with abnormal number of monsters. And then the appearance of a troublesome monster—I see, could it be this place-!」 , but I naturally ignored him.

I immediately gave instruction to everyone.

「Teacher, please step back. Julius and Chris, you two are the vanguards. Jilk, you're fire support.」

Jilk glanced at me with grenade in his hand.

「Oh, Count Bartfalt, are you just planning to watch?」

「Don't be stupid. I'll circle behind it and annoy it from a safe place!」

I started running. Julius and Chris also followed along.

When the Chimera Beast caught sight of us, it looked up and roared. Its volume hurt our ears.

The one who attacked first was Jilk. He didn't even wait until it finished its roar.

「How about this!」

The grenade he threw produced flame that enveloped the Chimera Beast. However it didn't seem to be inconvenienced even when its hair caught fire. It stepped forward and attacked Julius and Chris.

It placed its hands on the ground to run on four limbs and attacked with its horns to skewer Julius.

「So you're targeting me! I'll praise your courage!」

Julius stabbed the sword in his hand into the ground and formed a magic circle in front of him. The shape of the magic circle was like a shield, and indeed, it defended the Chimera Beast's charge just as its shape suggested.

The Chimera Beast bounced back from the collision. Chris attacked using that opening.

「SEYAAAAA!」

He swung down his sword with both hands using all his strength. A deep wound was dealt to the Chimera Beast.

The blade was glowing. It looked like it was leaving behind a trail of light in the trajectory of the sword.

Mr. Narcisse yelled.

「Be careful! That thing has high regenerative ability!」

It was just as he said. The Chimera Beast's wound regenerated but—.

「Aim its eyes.」

I circled behind it and fired my shotgun while giving instruction to Jilk.

「Don't ask me for something difficult like that as though it's easy.」

Even though he said that, Jilk sniped the Chimera Beast's eye with his rifle.

This guy was normally garbage, but his strength was the real deal.

「Chris! Do pincer attack with me!」

「Leave it to me.」

While the two of them were attacking the Chimera Beast's limbs, I aimed and pulled the trigger of my shotgun.

Blood gushed out from the monster's head, but it then looked at me with its regenerated eye.

「Hey」

When I greeted it like that, it howled and rushed toward me.

I immediately took my device with my left hand and touched the screen that I had prepared beforehand. It deployed a magic circle around me.

「Man, this thing is really handy!」

The Chimera Beast crashed on an invisible wall and fell behind. Julk threw a grenade at that timing.

These guys were merciless.

But when the smoke cleared up, the Chimera Beast was still in good health.

It was regenerating its arm that was blown away. Julius and others sought instruction from me after seeing that.

「Bartfalt, we won't be able to defeat it like this.」

「Don't worry. I've got a trump card with me.」

I loaded my shotgun with a specially made magic bullet and pumped the shotgun before telling everyone to back away.

「Everyone get away!」

I pulled the trigger after confirming that Julius and Chris had got good enough distance. The bullet hit the Chimera Beast—and blew away its upper body.

The Chimera Beast that lost its upper body generated a lot of black smoke and vanished.

The black smoke covered the whole room, but then something shined from the deepest part of the room.

That faint light was greenish in color. The black smoke was getting sucked toward it.

When the smoke was disappearing from the surrounding, there was a single sapling there.

I looked at that sapling and leaned the shotgun on my shoulder.

「—This is without a doubt the “sacred tree’s sapling” eh.」

That sapling was glittering with sublime radiance from the sunlight that was pouring from the ceiling. It was the key item of the second game, the sacred tree’s sapling.

# **Chapter 9 – A Despicable Trap**

## **Part 1**

Inside the dungeon.

After finding the sacred tree's sapling, I asked Mr. Narcisse to appraise it.

「M-magnificent. It's just like the legend said. The excessive number of monsters that we encountered on our way here and also the existence of a monster that protected the sapling, they were just like what I read in the book!」

「Then, this thing is undoubtedly a sacred tree's sapling, is that right?」

I asked just in case. Mr. Narcisse nodded to my question with sparkling eyes.

His eyes were fixed solely to the sapling. He wasn't looking toward me.

「There is no mistake. The sacred tree's sapling has been discovered several times before this, but in the end it would wither every time. According to an academic conference, there must be a meaning in the place where the sapling is discovered, so when you find one it's recommended to secure that location—」

The story seemed like it would be a long one, so I put down my rucksack and took out a glass case from there.

The case was like a bowl to plant sapling with acrylic covering it.

Then I pulled out the sapling roughly.

「Heave-ho」

Mr. Narcisse who saw the sapling uprooted right before his eyes screamed.

「W-w-w-wh-what in the world are you doinggggg!」

Mr. Narcisse protested to me with a look of despair. I planted the sapling into the bowl with a smile.

「No, this is my objective this time. I think I'll be able to lure even the six great nobles if I have this, so it's lucky that we found it.」

I thought it would take several days, but it was just fortunate that we found one in the first day.

「Your objective is the sacred tree's sapling? Don't tell me, you knew that there is a sacred tree's sapling here from the start?」

「No way. I just thought that it would be great if we actually find one. —This thing will be the bait to drag out that bastard Pierre.」

From my investigation, apparently the sacred tree's sapling was an item that the six great nobles greatly desired.

Surely it had an important meaning for them.

「Wait a second. I'll contact my family, the Granze House. We will take back the airship from Pierre too, so I want you to hand over that sapling to Alzer. It's not something to be used for gambling object!」

I transplanted the sapling, covered it with the case, and held it up with one hand. I peered to it.

With this it wouldn't wither for a while.

「Don't wanna. You see—I want to punch Pierre's ugly mug with this hand.」

Mr. Narcisse looked on uncomprehendingly at my desire. He shook his head side to side.

But, he seemed to realize something and lifted up his head.

「T—that's right. If this area is an optimum environment for a sapling to grow, then it might be possible to obtain another sapling just by securing this place—」

Mr. Narcisse looked around. What he saw caused blood to recede from his face.

「Jilk, look! I got a magic stone this big.」

Julius was boasting about the magic stone in his arms. Jilk was looking at it enviously.

「Your highness, please lend me a shovel too.」

「I refuse. I want to gather even more magic stones.」

The two of them were talking like kids fighting for toys. Beside them Chris was working hard with his upper body naked.

He was digging up the ground and piling up metals around him.

Chris wiped up the sweat on his forehead after finishing his task.

「It feels pleasant to obtain a big catch like this. Even so, it'll be backbreaking to bring this much back.」

The area was getting wrecked up.

Mr. Narcisse screamed toward the sky.

「WHAT THE HELL ARE YOU GUYS DOINGGGGG!!」

Then I took out my device and operated it.

By doing that the small ship that had come nearby slowly descended from the ceiling.

「T-this is, isn't this Leon-kun's airship!? How can it move by itself even though there is no one in it?」

Mr. Narcisse found a new object of interest and calmed down. During that time I talked to Julius who was carrying a magic stone in his arms.

「Load the treasures you find on the airship. We'll bring them back and sell them.」

「Bartfalt, even that small ship can move by itself?」

「Yeah, that's right. Ah, also, we're going to bring back the magic stones and other treasures we find in this adventure to the kingdom and sell them there, so just be patient with the advance payment for now as your reward.」

「That's fine but—」

Apparently he was more curious with the small ship rather than the matter about reward.

「I'll bring back some tool, so prepare to load all the treasures.」

I didn't really feel like speaking much about it, so I immediately got onto the small ship.

Then I found a letter in the small ship that wasn't there before our departure.

There was also a paper bag placed along with the letter. It was filled with dog food for Noelle-chan.

I opened the letter and read the inside before putting it into my pocket.

.

## Part 2

Around that time.

Einhorn that was anchored at the harbor was boarded by men in black suits.

A man wearing a flashy suit was leading them. He was wearing a muffler on his shoulder.

Pierre welcomed that man and talked with him with a friendly tone.

「Yo, you look well.」

「Pierre-sama, it looks like you have been playing your game again, very loudly this time.」

That fat man took off his hat and acted subserviently toward Pierre.

Luxion was watching that scene.

『And who could this be?』

「Ahn? Don't keep asking questions every time. These guys are merchants. Well, they are handling items that can't be shown publicly though.」

『—I see.』

The merchant started smoking. He instructed his subordinate to hand Pierre several leather bags.

Pierre's hangers-on accepted the bags and checked the inside. There were bundles of money inside.

「Pierre-san, there is no problem here.」

「I see. Then bring it out.」

Based on the number of money bundles inside the bags, this seemed to be a transaction in the scale of several billion yen.

What Pierre's hangers-on brought out in exchange of the money was a glowing green sphere as big as a bowling ball.

When the merchant took it, he lifted up the corner of his lips high.

「Thank you for your business every time.」

「I'm also thankful yeah. After all you paid me good money just for smuggling orb that almost run out of juice.」

Luxion stared at the sphere that was called an orb and started collecting data.

(So this is an orb. It's containing a lot of energy inside it. I heard that there is an item called orb among the sacred tree's fruits. So this is the actual article—it's very interesting, but the country should be the one managing the usage of all orbs.)

Pierre was selling an important item that was managed by the country in a place outside of public eyes. It didn't look honest at all.

It seemed Pierre and this merchant had a dark connection behind the closed doors.

「—And, when will Pierre-sama obtain the seat of the family head?」

Pierre smiled sinisterly once more when the merchant asked that.

He gnawed on his nail and spoke of various things to the merchant who he thought as his comrade.

「Even the old man is interested with this airship. He was pretty happy when I talked to him about going to war with the kingdom

soon and taking away their technology to mass produce this airship. I might become the next head without even needing to make my brother disappear.]

「That's a great news! All my investments to Pierre-sama until now is worth every penny.】

Luxion consolidated the information that it listened from the two's conversation.

(Pierre who is aiming for the seat of family head joined hand with this merchant by smuggling orb to him. Perhaps he is gathering fun in order to become the family head?)

Luxion would at least evaluate Pierre for his backbone to kick down even his elder brother in order to stand at the top.

After all such backbone was something that Leon lacked.

But, it couldn't evaluate Pierre highly in regard to his choice of friend.

Pierre's hangers-on were counting the money.

The inside of Einhorn was filled with ruffians that looked like pirate no matter how anyone looked at it.

They were Pierre's subordinates, but all of them were thugs without exception.

While Pierre was having pleasant conversation with the merchant, one of his hangers-on suddenly ran into the ship.

「Pierre-san, there's trouble!】

Pierre turned toward the hanger-on who yelled that loudly and scowled.

「Don't be so loud you idiot. And, what happened? Is the kingdom attacking?」

Pierre wasn't receiving the interruption with too much seriousness, but his attitude changed drastically when he listened to the detail.

「It's not that. A sacred tree's sapling has been discovered! What's more it's a sapling that hasn't withered yet.」

「—Really?」

It seemed to be an information that shocked even Pierre. He listened to his hanger-on seriously.

「Yes. But, it's the overseas students who obtained it. In addition the guy called Leon rode into the academy with the sacred tree's sapling on hand. It seems he is making a commotion asking them to bring out Pierre-san.」

Luxion was floating quietly.

Pierre was making an annoyed expression.

「He is calling me out? —But, I want it, that sacred tree's sapling. I want to take it from that Leon guy, but as expected I won't be able to do anything in the academy.」

「A-about that, it looks like Louise-san is backing him up. Mr. Narcisse is also with him, so it doesn't look like we'll be able to easily make a move on him.」

「Louise is with him?」

Pierre pondered slightly after hearing Louise's name.

It seemed he wasn't interested with the mention of Narcisse.

「—Well, fine. Let's go take a look at this sacred tree's sapling.」

Pierre and his gang hurriedly departed toward the academy. Luxion saw them off while thinking.

(They want to obtain the sacred tree's sapling even though there is already the grown up sacred tree here? I can understand their feeling that wants to obtain it but, they look more anxious than expected.)

Luxion's red lens shined eerily.

.

## **Part 3**

I was led into the reception room when I came to the academy.

I was holding up the case that was filled with the sacred tree's sapling with one hand while sitting brazenly in front of the teachers.

I was putting up my leg on the table.



The teachers were scowling seeing my behavior.

「Bartfalt-kun, aren't you being rude right now?」

「—This is why the people of the kingdom are all savage.」

「Enough about that, please put down the sapling right away. What if you drop it!?」

The teachers were showing various reactions.

They were completely flustered in the presence of the sacred tree's sapling.

Unexpectedly it was Mr. Clement who was calming down that situation.

「Everyone, let's calm down a little. Narcisse-kyun too, please give up a proper explanation.」

「—Mr. Clement, why are you hugging my arm?」

「Oh my. This clumsy me, how can I act so shamelessly like this.」

Just when I thought he was taking control of the situation seriously, he was snuggling close to Mr. Narcisse. In addition was 「Narcisse-kyun」!? It seemed that Mr. Clement's type was someone like Mr. Narcisse. He showed no sign of letting go even after saying that he was being shameless.

Mr. Narcisse seemed to be ignorant of someone else's feeling. He didn't look like he was noticing Mr. Clement's effort in making appeal toward him.

This insensitive fellow—good grief, I wouldn't care even if something irreversible happen because you didn't notice the other person's

feeling even after they were appealing so blatantly like that toward you.

The other teachers also quietly averted their gazes. When the place became quiet, Louise-san who was standing near me gave me a warning.

「Leon-kun, you're behaving rudely.」

「Oh, pardon me for this. After all I'm just an upstart who was formerly a savage adventurer. It can't be helped that I'm handling the sapling slovenly because of that.」

The teachers inside the room made a bitter expression when I talked sarcastically.

I put down my legs from the table and placed the case that was filled with the sacred tree's sapling—no, my luck bringer sapling-chan on the table.

However, my hand didn't let go of it.

「More importantly, bring Pierre here already. How long are you guys planning to make me wait?」

One of the teachers warned me in panic about my way of speaking.

「Stop talking so rudely like that. You're talking about someone from the six great nobles here. Louise-sama too, please stop siding with this person.」

I turned my gaze toward Louise-san, but she didn't show any sign of following the words of the teachers.

「It's not your business who I'm siding with.」

The teachers fell silent when the princess of the six great nobles said that.

Even so, why would this person cooperate with me until this far?

She didn't even show any sign of trying to trick me.

Mr. Narcisse sighed.

「It looks like he has come.」

The door was suddenly opened roughly and Pierre appeared there with his hangers-on.

He was reeking of alcohol even though the sun was still high in the sky.

He looked irritated from getting called here, but his eyes snapped wide open when seeing sapling-chan that I had.

「Is that the real thing?」

His eyes already didn't see me anymore. His hand reached out to take sapling-chan away.

「Don't touch.」

When I lifted up the case, he immediately glared at me with a scowl.

「You son of a bitch, who the hell do you think you're talking to huh?」

When the back of Pierre's right hand started glowing, Louise-san stood in front of me.

「Stop. Pierre, it will be two on one if you start something here.」

「Move aside Louise! Are you going to oppose me? You are the same chosen people like me!」

He must be proud for being chosen by the sacred tree.

But, Louise-san didn't step aside.

Mr. Narcisse also joined the talk.

「Pierre, enough with unseemly act.」

「Even the pretend scholar Narcisse is siding with this guy? You two, aren't you mortified that the sacred tree's sapling fell to the hand of this kind of guy!?」

The other teachers were staying quiet at Pierre's behavior.

It would be troublesome to keep this on so I came out.

「Stop squealing you trash. It's irritating to hear. —Now then, you better keep your promise from before.」

「Ahn?」

Pierre's ill-bred henchmen were also inside the room, but they didn't interrupt the talk because Louise-san and Mr. Narcisse were here.

Pierre brought his face closer to me with a thuggish expression and his hands in his pockets.

「You said it before right? That you'll fight me if I prepared something of equal value. Or perhaps, you can't even remember your own words from not long ago? Pardon me then. Is this talk too difficult for you perhaps?」

His face immediately went red after I provoked him for a bit.

「Don't fuck around. I'll kill you here!」

「Try it if you can. But this thing will also wither at that time though.」

Even Pierre's mouth shut up when I showed sapling-chan to him.

This thing was only a key item in that otome game, but it proved to be useful enough when it was in the real world.

「I'll fight you if you put Einhorn that you stole from me on the line. As for the method—I'll be fine with a simple duel where you can also use armor. However, my condition is that you can't use the sacred tree's power.」

Pierre showed a surprised expression just for a moment when I said that.

He was showing hesitation and refused with an agitated look.

「Why the hell you bastard are deciding the rule huh? That's unfair.」

「Unfair? I'm amazed a cheating bastard like you can say that. You want me to prepare a mirror?」

「Kuh!」

He was enraged and immediately tried to rely on the sacred tree's power, but he stopped because Louise-san and Mr. Narcisse were also here.

「We won't finish talking like this so I'll continue. I'm not like you coward, I'm simply suggesting to have a fair duel using armor. I'll ask Louise-san and Mr. Narcisse to be our witnesses. —Or what? Pierre-kun, you don't want to have a fair fight because you won't be able to win like that?」

*Perhaps you can't fight without handicap~?* This amusing guy immediately reacted when I provoked him like that.

「—Alright, bring it on.」

Pierre finally steeled himself. I then confirmed the conditions.

「Then, let's swear to this sacred tree thingy. I'm betting the sacred tree's sapling. I'll hand over this thing if I lose.」

「Fie. Then I'll return your ship to you if I lose.」

I made an exaggerated sigh and said 「You don't get it~」 to Pierre.

「It'll be pointless if you only return the airship but emptied everything in it. I'll have you return everything you took from me. You get that, "everything". If you lose against me, bring right in front of me everything that you stole from me.」

I wouldn't allow him saying something like *I returned the ship, but I won't return Arroganz!*

That kind of excuse obviously wouldn't fly!

Pierre corrected his wording with a fed up look after I told him that.

「Yeah~, I'll return them. If this great Pierre-sama lose, I'll return everything I took. You're satisfied?」

Pierre wasn't bothered with the detail. He didn't look like he considered even the slightest possibility of losing.

「Say that you will bring them "in front of me" properly. You get it, all of them.」

「That's only if you win against me.」

Mr. Narcisse confirmed the conditions for the last time.

「Then, Louise and I will be the witnesses. Will both of you swear to the sacred tree that you will follow the conditions mentioned just now? Is there also no problem with the date and time?」

I nodded with a wide smile. —Yes. It was fine like this.

「Of course.」

But Pierre looked disgruntled.

「Wait a second. Does this guy has any armor?」

How kind of him to be concerned about me.

「No, I don't have any. I plan to buy a new one in the commonwealth.」

Then Louise-san suggested to me.

「I'll prepare one for you. That's fine right?」

Pierre suddenly opposed strongly to that suggestion.

「That's not allowed! I won't allow the witnesses to back the participant. I won't accept it unless this guy prepare an armor by himself.」

Louise-san looked like she wanted to argue back, but I stopped her.

「—That's fine. And, what if I can't procure one?」

「Then fight without one. That'll be a wonderful show. A wonderful show of the kingdom's hero unable to do anything against this great Pierre-sama before crying and apologizing in front of everyone!」

Pierre looked like he was having a lot of fun. I smiled along with him.

「Alright.」

「Leon-kun!」

Louise-san got shocked, but Pierre turned his gaze toward Mr. Narcisse.

「The person himself said he is fine with that. Got any problem?」

「—Pierre, I won't allow any underhanded act.」

Mr. Narcisse said that and raised his right hand. A magic circle formed on the floor of the room after that.

It was the duel method of the commonwealth that was making use of the oath to the sacred tree. It seemed to have the implication that after the match ended, the participants would be forced to keep their promise.

Mr. Narcisse proclaimed.

「This is a sacred duel under the oath to the sacred tree. Both of you must not forget the meaning of that.」

Mr. Narcisse must be saying that to imply that any act that would besmirch the sacred duel must not be done.

I carried the sapling under my arm.

「Of course.」

After that Pierre led his henchmen out of the room.

「Hopefully you can prepare an armor before the day of duel.」

Pierre leered disgustingly while saying that remark. I replied to him.

「Yeah, I'll prepare one by myself.」

.

## Part 4

Pierre returned to Einhorn and drank alcohol in a great mood.

He was at the hangar.

Pierre was laughing in front of Arroganz that had been decorated to have a spiky look.

「Those guys are really idiots!」

The people around Pierre were also agreeing with him.

Pierre brought the wine bottle to his mouth and gulped it all in one breath. Then he threw the empty bottle to the floor.

No one paid it any mind even when the bottle was smashed.

Einhorn's interior was in a very messy condition.

The worker robots were cleaning all the messes quietly.

「That guy want to obtain an armor in this country. There's no way he can.」

One hanger-on handed a new bottle to Pierre.

「Pierre-san is really a horrible person. To make someone come out in a duel without any armor like that」

「It's his fault for getting tricked.」

Pierre and his hanger-on were heating up. They were talking in excitement as though they had won already.

「The old man will name me as the heir when I obtain the sapling. Then I'll kick out big brother to live on the street.」

Pierre was also thinking about after he became the head of Faiviel House.

「If I have the sacred tree's sapling, Rault House won't be able to keep acting like a big shot. Even that cheeky Louise will only be able to what I say.」

One of the hangers-on got worried.

「Will that be alright? There is a rumor that she is going to get engaged with Hughes-san.」

「I don't give a damn. Besides as long as I have the sacred tree's sapling, then they will be the one to bow at me asking to marry their daughter. As I thought, Louise is the only woman worthy for me.」

Pierre was getting excited thinking about the future. He then got another idea.

「That's right—just to make doubly sure」

He talked with a wide smirk. He was waiting impatiently for the day of the duel to arrive.

.

## Part 5

In front of Leon's house.

Lelia visited there.

Lelia came with a memo in her hand. She rang the bell and waited for someone to come out.

—However, no one came out.

「Hey, why isn't there anyone who come out?」

She rang the bell many times in irritation. Then a passerby talked to her.

「You there, the inhabitant of that house won't come home for a while.」

「Eh?」

This person seemed to be someone who lived in this neighborhood. Lelia asked about Leon from him.

「Just a little while ago he went out while carrying a lot of luggage. It was too much luggage just for going to a trip, but it also didn't look like he was moving out. I still remembered because it seemed strange to me.」

「W-where did he go!?」

「Who knows? There was also a girl around the same age with him, perhaps they were lovers eloping at night?」

The passerby left after saying that. Lelia's hand let go of the memo with a dumbfounded look in her face.

「—No way. I-I'LL BE IN TROUBLE LIKE THATTTT!」

After a while she yelled while holding her head.

.

## Part 6

「What now!? What now big bro!?」

「You're noisy Marie-san.」

I was staying in Marie's mansion while the day of the duel was approaching near.

The reason was because it would be safer for everyone to stay in one place.

Marie became tearful after I called her with “-san” added to her name.

「Because! At this rate big bro won't have any armor at the day of the duel! Even though it will already be hard to win against Arroganz even with armor, big bro will become mince meat if you go out there unarmored like that!」

I was unable to obtain a new armor.

「It can't be helped. No one will sell me an armor. The merchants of Alzer are really stingy.」

「This isn't a laughing matter~」

It seemed Marie thought that I was still angry with her. She was more obedient than usual.

Even now she was serving me like a waitress.

I drank the tea that Marie brewed—it was really bad.

「It's lukewarm. Remake it.」

「—Yes.」

Marie left the room carrying the cup and teapot while looking like she was going to cry. She cussed 「That damn tea maniac!」 after she left the room.

It was really just like Marie to let go of her caution at the very end like that.

Inside the room I leaned on the chair and thought of a way to pass the time until the day of the duel.

「Now then, with my inability to purchase a new armor, I'll have to fight Arroganz with my flesh body. H~m, how despairing.」

My reliable partner wasn't here.

I got into a habit of sending glances to my right shoulder.

「—That damn bonehead.」

I cursed while waiting for Marie to return. It was then Noelle entered the room.

「Hey, did something happen? I saw Marie-chan putting a thermometer inside a teapot and muttering to herself while pouring water. Is she doing some kind of experiment?」

What was that girl doing?

Perhaps to Noelle's eyes she was doing some kind of science experiment.

「I'm making fun of him right now. After all that girl is a hard worker only when she is cornered.」

There were many times I wanted to tell her to get serious right from the start.

「I-is that so? You two are really close. Ah, I forgot, there is a guest for you Leon.」

「Guest?」

「—It's Louise.」

## Part 7

Louise-san was there when I went to the entrance.

She folded her arms under her big breasts when she saw Noelle. Her face looked really irritated.

「—So you are really here.」

Louise-san said with narrowed eyes. Noelle averted her face.

「Don't say anything.」

「I have no time to care about you today. Leon-kun, I heard a rumor that you are unable to procure an armor, is that true?」

When I nodded in affirmative, Louise-san's expression turned frustrated.

「I can't lend you any help right now.」

「Because of this oath to the sacred tree?」

「—That's right. Pierre might not think much about it, but this oath to the sacred tree is something important for us.」

Noelle was showing displeasure when she heard those words.

「That thing isn't a sacred tree」

Hearing that, Louise-san glared at Noelle.

I clapped my hand to keep the talk on the right track.

「Okay, don't fight. And, is Louise-san coming here just to check on that rumor?」

「That's not it. I will talk to father about this matter, so Leon-kun, please meet him along with the sacred tree's sapling. The sapling is

really important for us. That's why I'll ask father to open a negotiation with Faiviel House. That should be far better than doing this kind of duel.]

Was she meaning to open a negotiation to exchange the sapling with Einhorn?

Doing it that way might also be possible, but I wouldn't be satisfying for me so I refused.

「That's no good.」

「Why's that!? You're going to die if you go into the duel like this!」

An armor versus flesh and blood human wouldn't even be a fight.

Even I understood that much.

「I'm happy that Louise-san is trying to help me. But you see—I can't forgive Pierre.」

I should crush him earlier at the beginning.

The me who was fixated with troublesome thing like event or the like was stupid.

Noelle was looking at me worriedly.

「H-hey, you shouldn't force yourself doing reckless thing. In the first place the other side is the one in the wrong, so it'll be better if you rely on Louise here.」

Noelle and Louise-san were worried for me. Guess I'd told them something important.

「Do you two know why I'm called as a hero in the kingdom?」

「Eh? —B-because you're strong?」

Noelle gave a very simple answer even while looking bewildered.

In contrast Louise-san gave a slightly different answer.

「Perhaps it's luck? No matter how strong you are, you won't be able to become a hero without the right chance for it.」

「Both of you are right! However my answer is different. The requirement to become a hero is—to survive. In addition is to not go into a fight that you will lose. You just need to continue fighting only an opponent that you can beat.」

Noelle immediately replied when I proclaimed that confidently.

「Eh, isn't that cowardly?」

「—B-being called a coward is the highest praise in the battlefield.」

That was what Luxion said so it must be right.

.

## **Part 8**

The day before the duel.

Pierre and his hangers-on came to a bar for the advance celebration.

「It's the advance celebration for my victory! Drink as much as you like!」

The thugs who were following him chased out the guests inside the bar and made their order to the waitress.

The bar owner brought the alcohol to Pierre. He squeezed out his courage and made a request.

「Pierre-sama, the bill's amount has been piling up. Also, if I can please beg you to not trouble the other customers too much」

Hearing that request, Pierre poured the alcohol he received on the bar owner's head.

「What? You want to protest to this great Pierre-sama?」

「N-no, by no means I—」

「Who do you owe your thanks to so that trashes like you guys can live in Alzer like this? Say it!」

Pierre punched the bar owner, but the bar owner didn't look he was really hurt by Pierre's fist.

That offended Pierre's feeling.

「You guys, wreck this place!」

Pierre's angry yell made the companions around him stood up and started trashing the bar.

The bar owner hurriedly clung on one of Pierre's friend.

「P-please stop! I'm begging you!」

「It's your fault for making Pierre-san angry!」

The bar owner got kicked away on the ground. His wife and daughter ran toward him.

「Dear!」

「Papa!」

Pierre started laughing with a grin when the two helped the bar owner to stand up.

「This is a bit lacking for an advance celebration, guess I should make your family to take responsibility after you angered me like this.」

The bar owner guessed what Pierre was thinking and stepped forward to defend his wife and daughter.

「S-STOPPPPPP!」

Pierre lifted up his right hand toward the resisting bar owner and tree roots grew up through the floor.

Pierre's henchmen gathered around the bar owner who was restrained by the roots.

「You guys, let's go outside.」

The restrained bar owner reached out toward his wife and daughter who were dragged away.

「Let go of them!」

Pierre laughed with a wide smirk.

「Yeah, we'll let them go after having some fun. Though, I think you better worry about yourself.」

Pierre and his henchmen went outside and lit the bar on fire.

They did that while the bar owner was still inside.

The bar owner's wife and daughter cried and screamed seeing the blazing flame.

「NOOOOO!」

Pierre cackled seeing them crying. He looked like he was genuinely having fun.

「Those who oppose me are going to end up like this!」

The people who gathered around there were watching Pierre with frustration.

But, no one said anything.

Even the military officers of the commonwealth who came here after hearing the commotion only moved to extinguish the fire without capturing anyone when they learned that Pierre was the culprit.

「Small fries just need to obey me!」

Pierre's voice resounded in front of the burning bar.

## **Part 9**

At the day of the duel.

In the end I couldn't obtain any armor.

I was squatting to watch Noelle-chan eating her food in the mansion while talking to her.

「Eat a lot. Your owner will also return soon.」

I didn't think that she would be able to understand my words, but Noelle-chan looked at my face once before returning to her food.

Kyle was watching me doing that while placing his hands behind his head.

「Count, you are being carefree like usual. Be more serious in this situation.」

「Haha~, I'm being healed from watching Noelle-chan.」

「The duel is today you know? Can you win?」

「H~m, I wonder?」

Kyle was staring fixedly at me.

「Well, I believe that you have some kind of plan. More importantly, recently goshujin-sama is acting strange.」

「That girl is always strange so don't worry.」

When I stood up, Cara came bringing a brown paper bag.

「Count Bartfalt, a packet came for you.」

「I see.」

「But, the sender is unknown.」

「Ah, it's fine.」

I received the bag and found a glove inside it.

It was a black leather glove with knuckle guard attached.

I put it inside my pocket while Cara was taking care of Noelle-chan.

「Cara, you're going to stay behind to take care of Noelle-chan?」

「Yes. Please leave it to me!」

Cara was a woman who sent me into a trap before, but now she could make a face like this as though there was no burden that was haunting her anymore.

「Then I'll leave it to you.」

As for Kyle, it seemed he would come to the duel to cheer for me.

「I'll be cheering from the audience stand with everyone.」

「I see. Then bet on me. I'll make you profit a lot.」

「Apparently in this country you cannot make a bet with a duel that is held under the oath to the sacred tree. Goshujin-sama mentioned that.」

「Eh, is that so?」

Even though I wanted to place a bet if there was any gambling, it was unfortunate but it couldn't be helped.

Well, it didn't matter.

「Then I'm going. You guys, don't be late.」

After I said that and moved to leave the mansion, Noelle got out of the mansion while holding the case that was filled with sapling-chan.

「Leon, you forget this! You mustn't leave this behind!」

Seeing Noelle holding sapling-chan in her arms, I put my hand on my chin and thought.

—And then I was struck with an idea.

「You hold on it Noelle.」

「Eh, is that alright? This is a very important thing though.」

Noelle looked bewildered. I answered her with a smile.

「I have the feeling that it will be better for it to be with Noelle rather than with me. Well, there won't be any problem even if it got taken away. I'll take it back without fail in that case, so just hold on it while feeling at ease.」

Noelle hugged the case that was filled with sapling-chan.

「I don't want it to be stolen but—okay, I get it. I'll hold on it.」

I felt slightly jealous to Jean when I saw Noelle's smile.

Good grief, this just cannot do. Even though I got two fiancées waiting back home.

.

## Part 10

「Cara, take care of Brad and Noelle-chan!」

At the mansion's entrance.

Cara was seeing off Marie and others leaving while holding Noelle in her arms.

After they left she would take Noelle outside to breathe fresh air.

「Noelle-chan, let's walk outside for a bit.」

But when she was going to close the gate, a man's hand suddenly reached out and grabbed the gate.

「Eh?」

Faster than Cara could react, the gate was opened and men in black suits came inside.

「W-what's going on!?」

The black suited men grabbed Cara right away.

「Is this girl fine?」

「I guess.」

「Then let's take her right away.」

Cara was trembling in fear seeing the men taking out a rope. Then Brad who noticed the noise from the entrance peeked out from the mansion.

「I thought I'd take a look because you would go out, but to think there is another trouble happening.」

「Brad-san!」

「I'll have you men let go of Cara-san.」

Brad came out even though his wounds still hadn't healed fully. The men looked at each other.

「Let's beat him up.」

「Search for the sacred tree's sapling too while we're at it.」

Brad broke into cold sweat in front of the black suited men.

「—What a pain. Even though I still haven't completely recovered」

# **Chapter 10 – Marie’s Turn**

## **Part 1**

The duel arena in Alzer was also built in round shape.

The walls were high and the audience seats were also placed in high position.

If there was any difference with the arena in the kingdom’s academy, it would be the gazes that were directed to me.

Unlike in the kingdom’s academy where there were boos and jeers showering me, in the academy here I could feel sympathetic gazes and voices instead.

「No way, he is really going out without armor.」

「He is going to get killed.」

「This is because he went against noble.」

There were also some who were laughing at me, but those were the hangers-on of Pierre.

They were throwing insults at me from the audience seats.

「What’s wrong, Hohlfahrt’s hero!」

「You can’t even prepare any armor huh?」

「Aren’t you gutsy, going out into a duel unarmored like that」

Good grief, what a vulgar bunch.

Then a black armor descended from the sky.

It landed in a flashy way on the ground. It was the figure of Arroganz that had transformed to have a very spiky look.

「Uwa~, what bad taste~」

It was painted with skull mark that seemed to be Pierre's preference. The armor looked really sinister.

The pilot, Pierre laughed when he saw me.

『Gyahahaha! Oi, are you forgetting that this is a duel using armor you idiot!』

Even though he was the one putting on pressure to the merchants so I couldn't procure any armor, he got no scruples at all making fun of me like this.

「I'm amazed you can say that when you had been planning this from the start.」

『It's your own fault for getting tricked!』

—Pierre's words weren't wrong.

That was right—the one who got tricked was the one at fault.

Arroganz that now looked like a villain's ride pointed at me with its index finger.

『Don't think that I'll forgive you even if you're apologizing now!』

I was listening to Pierre's speech while taking out a glove from my pocket and wearing it.

『What? You're going to fight barehanded!?』

While Pierre and his hangers-on were laughing, I placed my hand on my waist in exasperation.

「Stop wasting time and start the duel already.」

『Right. Even so, if this is how it gonna be then there wasn't any need for me to make doubly sure.』

「—Aa?」

I raised my eyebrow in question. In respond Pierre cackled with a foul voice.

『Was her name Cara? There was also a dog with her.』

Pierre only said that and didn't say anything more.

「—You son of a bitch」

『Let's get this show on the road already.』

—You're really a scum that doesn't betray my expectation.

.

## **Part 2**

Marie who was listening to the conversation between Leon and Pierre from the audience seat opened her eyes wide when Pierre mentioned Cara's name suggestively.

Pierre was only mentioning the name, but she already got the general idea of what he had done.

Greg punched his own palm.

「That fucker! Who was it that said about not using dirty method because this is a sacred duel!?」

Julius was also showing his anger.

「He not only hindered the procurement of armor but he even take hostage.」

The witnesses Narcisse and Louise also seemed to be opposing for the duel to be carried out like this.

「This kind of duel cannot be allowed.」

「Yes, let's stop it immediately.」

While the two of them were thinking to stop the duel because of Pierre's method that was just too dirty, Marie noticed that Leon was saying something.

He took out a device from his pocket and threw it toward Marie.

Marie caught it and looked at Leon's face.

From his eyes and expression, she understood that he was telling her 「Save Cara and Noelle」 .

Marie looked down at the device and peered onto the screen. The device looked similar like a smartphone in her previous life. The way to operate it was also similar so she immediately understood.

When she looked at the screen—the map that displayed where Cara and Noelle were apprehended was displayed.

Noelle noticed what Marie was doing and talked to her.

「Marie-chan?」

Marie lifted up her face and spoke with a cold voice and a sharp gaze.

「The chance to make a comeback has come.」

「Eh?」

Marie turned around and snapped at Julius and others who were still complaining in indignation.

「How long are you guys going to do nothing but complaining!」

「N-no, Marie. We're worried for Cara and—」

「We just need to rescue them if you're worried.」

Jilk tried to calm Marie down.

「Please calm down Marie-san. We don't even know where Cara-san and Noelle-chan are right now, and it might be just the opponent bluffing. We should gather information first.」

Marie spoke sharply toward the men who were acting like that.

「Stop saying weak-willed things like that! You guys, aren't you being cowardly since coming to Alzer? It's us who are going to save

Cara and Noelle-chan! Leon is going to be the one beating up that Pierre while we're doing that!」

Chris looked toward the arena and hesitated.

「B-but, the opponent is wearing armor while Bartfalt doesn't have one—」

「All of you had lost against Leon already! Do all of you seriously think that guy will obediently come out into this situation to get slaughtered just like that? Believe in that guy. That guy—isn't a man who will show up to this kind of place without any plan. He is a guy who will have thoroughly prepared to push off his enemy to the very bottom persistently!」

The five fell silent after Marie said that.

Kyle scratched his cheek.

「My burden will increase if Cara-san is gone, so let's save her quickly. This place will be alright with the count here.」

Marie raised her voice in front of the five to encourage them.

「How long are you guys going to have that stupid face while doing nothing!? Hit back when you got hit! That's all there is to it!」

Julius smiled.

「You're right. Yeah that's right. It seems we've been acting like cowards.」

Jilk also smiled.

「Marie-san's words has opened my eyes.」

「Then let's go. We'll go back to the mansion first to confirm the situation.」

Marie dragged the men away from this place.

Narcisse was taken aback by their spirit. His hand stretched out toward them who were leaving.

「W-wait a second! We'll stop the duel right now!」

Marie looked back and yelled angrily at Narcisse.

「Don't do that no matter what! Just delay it or something, then start it after buying some time! We're going to save the hostages so don't get in the way!」

「E-ee~?」

Narcisse turned his gaze to Louise to ask for help.

Louise herself was looking at Leon in the arena. The person himself was making a gesture to continue the duel, so she sighed and put her hand on her waist.

「—It looks like the person himself want to continue.」

Noelle who was hugging the case that was containing the sapling was watching the arena where Leon was at with a worried look.

「Leon—」

The duel would continue as it was.

.

## Part 3

When Marie and the others returned to the mansion, they found the injured Brad there.

「Brad!」

Marie ran toward him and lifted up his upper body before using healing magic to heal his injuries.

Brad opened his eyes and apologized to Marie.

「Sorry, Marie. I couldn't protect Cara-san and Noelle-chan.」

「Don't talk right now.」

Greg and Chris brought Brad to his bed after Marie finished giving the first aid treatment.

Julius who was looking around the ransacked mansion made a bitter expression.

It seemed the inside of the mansion had been messed up.

「They are going this far.」

「In the end the so called sacred duel only worth this much. Is the word sacred has different meaning for the people of the commonwealth?」

Even Kyle looked angry. His words were dirtier than usual.

Marie looked on the device.

Then an exclamation mark appeared on the screen and there was an alarm sound ringing from it.

「Eh, up? —Uhya!」

The warning to be careful above their head showed up, so Marie looked toward the sky. Then some kind of box suddenly fell from above.

The box hit the ground \*gashan!\* with a loud sound. It caused dust cloud to rise up.

Kyle peered toward that box.

「W-what is it? Another harassment from the commonwealth?」

But Marie clutched the device tightly and walked toward the box. She opened the lid and looked inside.

「Marie-san, it's dangerous!」

She didn't even listen to Jilk's warning and reached inside. Then her hand took out a firearm from there.

Marie was familiar with that gun.

「So you're telling us to use this.」

It was a submachine gun—like the one that she often saw appearing in old mafia movie. It even had a magazine in the shape of a drum.

Julius also peered into the box and took out some bullets.

「These are non-lethal rubber bullets? Why are these things—」

Marie held the submachine gun with one hand and placed it on her shoulder.

「It doesn't matter. We'll use them. All of you should prepare too. After this—we will plunge into the enemy base to rescue Cara.」

.

## **Part 4**

The location was a warehouse complex at the harbor.

The merchant who had close relationship with Pierre was inside one of the warehouses there.

He was wearing a showy suit while his mouth was smoking a cigar.

He blew out smoke from his mouth and glanced at Cara who was hugging an old dog while trembling.

The old dog was licking Cara's cheek as though it was trying to calm her down.

「Young miss, you are unfortunate. You people were picking a fight with someone who you mustn't turn into enemy. You might be able to return back to your country if only you didn't act defiant, but now it's too late.」

The trembling Cara put on a brave front in front of the merchant.

「I-it's you people who are underestimating the count. That person is the hero of the kingdom. He is an amazing person who defeated someone really strong and saved even the country.」

The merchant placed his hand on his face and laughed after he heard that.

The men in black who were his subordinates were also laughing.

「He might be amazing back in your country young miss, but this is Alzer, the center of the world. A hero of that level isn't scary at all. Well, I think he must be turning into minced meat around this time.」

Cara hugged Noelle strongly and looked down.

「Even Pierre-san might show you mercy if you stay quiet young—」

The warehouse's door was blown away before the merchant could finish speaking.

His subordinates took up their weapon and aimed at the door. And then light entered the dark warehouse.

The rising dust cloud looked sparkling. In the middle of it some silhouettes appeared with light shining from behind them, covering up their front figure in shadow.

The merchant yelled his order to his subordinates in fear.

「Fire. FIREEEE!」

His subordinates fired all at once. The warehouse was filled with sound of gunfire for a while.

But when the place became quiet after they ran out of bullet, the merchant and his subordinates opened their eyes widely.

A magic circle in the shape of shield was protecting the silhouettes. The bullets they fired were crushed flat on it and fell on the floor.

The magic circle then vanished and a petite blonde haired girl stepped forward holding a large gun that looked too big for her.

Cara shed tears of happiness seeing that silhouette.

「MARIE-SAMAAAAA!」

Marie pulled the trigger of her submachine gun after seeing Cara calling her name while crying.

「Give—Cara backkkkk!」

Non-lethal bullets were fired from the submachine gun.

The men in black were shot one after another. The merchants were flustered seeing them dropping like flies.

(W-what, what's that weapon?)

The merchant had never seen anything like the submachine gun before. He couldn't hide his shock from that rapid fire capability.

But, it immediately ran out of bullet and stopped firing.

「Now! Subdue that little girl! Take her weapon no matter what!」

The merchant wished to obtain that unusual weapon. He saw that his subordinates were still alive and thought that the weapon had low power.

However his subordinates who approached Marie were shot and blown away by the men walking behind Marie.

Marie handed her submachine gun to the elf boy beside her and grabbed a handgun.

All of them were holding guns.

「Don't move! There is nowhere to run!」

When the merchant turned his gaze to the backdoor, the door knob was broken by a gunshot. The door then was kicked away and Greg entered while holding a shotgun.

「All your men around this place has been defeated.」

His escape path was blocked and his men were also defeated.

The merchant took out a handgun from his breast pocket to aim it toward Cara.

「D-don't mess with me you shitty brats! Don't you care what will happen to this—ihyai!」

Jilk shot the hand of the merchant with his handgun.

「You shouldn't point a gun to a girl.」

Jilk was smiling with his gun muzzle aimed toward the merchant.

Chris was tying up the merchant's subordinates.

And then Marie arrived to Cara's side and hugged her.

「Cara, you have done well enduring until now.」

「Uwaaaaahn!」

The merchant was watching in vexation while holding his wounded right arm with his left hand.

「D-don't think that you'll get away after doing something like this」

Julius approached him and turned his handgun toward him.

「I'm tired hearing that line. You should just worry about what will happen to you after this. Marie, let's tell Bartfalt quickly that Cara is rescued.」

When Julius turned his gaze toward Marie, he found her looking at the screen of the device in her grip.

「—The duel has started.」

.

## Part 5

Pierre had reached the limit of his patience in the duel arena and spoke in annoyance.

『How long are you going to make me wait! Are you looking down on this scared duel huh!?』

I was amazed that he could still say something like that. I was doing warm up exercise thoroughly while thinking that.

Pierre yelled angrily at Mr. Narcisse who was acting as the referee.

『The duel time has already come a long time ago! If you keep delaying like this then that means you are making light of the oath to the sacred tree!』

The audiences were also making noises.

The audiences that Pierre forcefully gathered here looked concerned because the duel wouldn't start no matter how long time had passed.

Still, I couldn't understand Pierre's feeling. Why would he gather audiences just to show himself winning against me?

Even if he won against me, it would only look like he was torturing the weak.

『Mr. Narcisse, please begin the duel.』

Mr. Narcisse closed his eyes in thought after I said that.

Noelle and Louise-san were watching me with a worried look, but Mr. Narcisse lifted up his right hand.

『O sacred tree, please watch over this duel. Give your blessing of victory to the righteous. —The duel will begin now!』

Pierre moved right after that proclamation.

Arroganz pulled out two battle axes from its backpack and held them at ready in each of its hand.

『Finally! I'll show my strength to you guys!』

Arroganz's appearance was sinister. There was also Pierre's voice that was going along with it.

「It's scary now that I'm looking at it from outside like this.」

Arroganz's huge frame was heading my way.

It was scarier than a dump truck rushing at me with full speed, but I calmly—ran forward.

『Haa!?』

Pierre was taken by surprise. He swung down his axe in panic, but I was already sliding right below Arroganz's legs at that time.

「It's unexpectedly difficult to target a human right?」

When I got behind Arroganz and said that, it turned around and spoke with a foul voice that didn't match it.

『Don't get cocky after getting away only once. This is to make an example of you! The audiences will also be more excited if you're resisting for a bit!』

「You're only good at making excuse huh?」

『—I'll kill you even if you cry while begging for your life.』

「Nice. —Don't forget those words.」

Arroganz swung its two battle axes in large arc.

## Part 6

Inside the warehouse.

The device's screen was displaying the figure of Leon fighting against Arroganz.

After watching that, Marie looked toward an airbike that was parked inside the warehouse.

It must be something that was used by the merchant's subordinate.

Its shape was like a water scooter. It had the size that could be rode by several people.

「Jilk! Send Cara and Noelle-chan to the area right away!」

Jilk who was holding a handgun immediately understood what Marie was asking him to do and straddled the airbike.

「Well, I guess I'm the right man for that job.」

He turned on the engine and checked the bike's condition.

「It can be used!」

And then Marie led Cara to sit behind Jilk with the dog Noelle in her arms.

「Cara, Leon will be able to fight without worry after he see you two are safe.」

「Y-yes! B-but, what are you going to do Marie-sama?」

In respond to that question, Marie glanced at the merchant who was looking frustrated while Julius and others were surrounding him.

「I have something to do here. It's alright. Leon will surely win. Jilk, hurry!」

「Please leave it to me. I will send them there quickly.」

The airbike floated in the air and flew away from the warehouse.

Marie slowly turned toward the merchant.

「—Now then, it's time for interrogation.」

The merchant was putting on a brave front.

「Remember this, I'll never forgive—」

The merchant was showing a rebellious attitude. Marie aimed her handgun to him and pulled the trigger without any hesitation.

\*Bang! Bang!\* Gunshot sound resounded. The empty shells that were ejected from the gun fell on the ground with light clinking sound.

「Hih, hiiii!」

The bullets were non-lethal bullets, but it would still hurt if it hit. After Marie continued firing until she ran out of bullet, the merchant's previous threatening attitude crumbled and he crouched down in fear.

「Goshujin-sama, I've finished the reloading.」

「Thank you Kyle.」

Marie had handed her handgun to Kyle who came to her side. She then accepted the submachine gun that Kyle had finished reloading for her as replacement.

And then she stood in front of the merchant.

「How dare you kidnapped Cara and also injured Brad.」

「I-it's a misunderstanding! I was only ordered! Pierre-san—no, that bastard Pierre was the one who ordered me, I couldn't oppose—igyaah!」

Marie fired at the merchant with her submachine gun.

Marie kept firing until the drum shaped magazine was emptied. Then she received a handgun from Kyle while handing over the submachine gun to him.

Her left hand grabbed the face of the merchant who had become painful to look at.

Then Marie's left hand glowed faintly and healed the merchant's wounds.

The merchant felt the pain receding and made a flattering smile toward Marie.

「Young lady, if you spare me I'll help you escape from that bastard Pierre.」

Marie smiled hearing the merchant's words—and pulled the handgun's trigger.

「WHYYYY!」

The merchant writhed in pain. Marie kept firing at him while still smiling.

「That's not what I want to know.」

「T-then! Ask me anything. I'll tell you anything if it's something that I know!」

「Hee, is that so?」

The merchant got desperate in order to weather this situation. Marie turned her gaze toward the dumbfounded Chris.

「Chris, do you have what I asked you to bring?」

「Y-yeah, but what are you going to do with this cheap thing? This is the first time I was told to search for a dull knife.」

Chris had purchased a knife on his way to this place. It was an inferior good just like he said.

Marie accepted the knife and approached a nearby metal shelves. She smashed the knife's blade on it to make the blade chipped.

「M-Marie?」

Greg looked confused because he couldn't understand the meaning of what she was doing. Then Marie looked at the blade that got chipped in various places and nodded.

「This will do.」

Then she turned toward the merchant. Marie's hands were holding the chipped knife.



「W-wait. What are you going to do with that?」

Marie innocently answered the shivering merchant.

「I learned from a book I read in Alzer. Was the title of the book Commonwealth Style Interrogation?」

The merchant was starting to tremble something fierce.

「Don't worry. I'm good with healing magic. That's why—you will be fine no matter what!」

「I'll talk! I'll tell you everything you want to know! So please not that!」

Marie smiled in front of the crying merchant.

「I'll continue hurting you, so you can say anything you want. But perhaps I'll stop if I heard something interesting from you.」

Kyle talked with a small voice seeing the merchant's trembling figure.

「Goshujin-sama, don't tell me you're going to torture him for real?」

「—Eh, I won't.」

「But」

Even Marie didn't want to do something like torture.

「Don't be stupid. This is to extract information from him. If we tell this guy what we want to know, he will lie in order to get away. That's why I'm letting him talk by himself. He will say a lot of important information because he don't know what we want to know.」

There was that kind of description inside a book that she read in Alzer's library.

Marie was simply testing that method.

「You'll go that far? It's a major turn off.」

「Shut up. I have to use this chance to take back Leon's trust! That guy is really dangerous when he is angry! It's seriously dangerous! I'll do this much if it means I can curry favor with him after that!」

Kyle wondered if perhaps Marie was over thinking it after seeing her this scared toward Leon.

「No, the count isn't that angry toward you goshujin-sama. I think he has forgiven you.」

「You don't know anything about that guy! Enough about that, we're going to extract information from this man no matter what. If I don't earn enough forgiveness point here, I will be next after Pierre—hiiii!」

The terrifying figure that the merchant witnessed couldn't be found there.

.

## Part 7

At the arena.

Pierre was losing his temper because I kept running around. He discarded his axes.

『It ain't fun using this weapon !』

It was really childish of him to blame his weapon like that.

「It's your lack of strength. You really have no talent as pilot, you can't kill me even though you're using Arroganz. I think it'll be better if you don't ride an armor.」

Pierre found it hard to accept my honest remark and took out a new weapon.

『I'm not playing anymore.』

He readied the rifle that was for Arroganz's use while talking with a low voice.

There were screams coming from the audience seat.

『I'll blow you up until nothing remain behind.』

I grinned at Pierre who was aiming his rifle toward me.

「Just try it you small fry.」

『DIEEEEE![

Pierre pulled the trigger without hesitation.

I leaped to the side before standing up right away and ran along the arena's wall.

When the rifle's bullets hit the arena's wall, the faint membrane enveloping the arena began to shine.

It was the magic shield that was protecting the audience seats.

But the bullets pierced through such shield and bore into the wall.

「What's wrong! Are you still playing around even now?」

Bullets were passing through the spot that I had just passed one after another.

『YOU FILTHY COWARD WHO CAN ONLY RUN AROUND!』

Pierre kept firing the rifle, but none of the bullets hit me.

『Why won't it hit! This damn junk!』

「You can't hit me even with Arroganz's specs. I think it'll be better if you lament your own uselessness.」

Pierre immediately reacted at my mocking.

Surely his face was bright red right now inside the cockpit.

『THIS THIRD RATE COUNTRY'S SHITTY TRASHHHHH!』

He threw the rifle toward me, so I crouched to dodge it. Arroganz charged toward me at that time.

Its large hand reached out to grab me, so I slipped below its legs to dodge.

「You still haven't noticed? —Arroganz was my armor. Naturally I know all of its weaknesses.」

I was sure that this guy would come with Arroganz.

After all I induced him to do that.

『Don't blabber so proudly you loser dog that can only run around!』

「A garbage who can't even defeat a single flesh and blood human shouldn't talk like you're human!」

『AAaaAAaaAaaaa!!』

The next weapon that Arroganz took out was a black large scythe that looked uncouth.

It was like a death god's scythe. Pierre chased me while swinging around the deathscythe.

The weapon's reach was wide. It was slightly troublesome.

「It's tiring even if I'm just running around.」

I got sweaty. I wiped the sweat that was dripping from my chin and looked toward the audience seats.

.

## **Part 8**

The battle that was unfolding in the area couldn't be called a duel.

A large black armor was attacking a flesh and blood human with a sinister weapon.

Leon was Arroganz's owner and knew its weakness. He was able to keep dodging the attacks skillfully.

But, his stamina was obviously reaching the limit.

At the audience seat Noelle was watching over him worriedly while hugging the sapling's case. She feared that he would get caught by Arroganz sooner or later.

「Something like this isn't a duel.」

The one sided development caused screams to come from the audience seats.

There were also those who were looking down without watching among the students who were forced by Pierre to come here.

「Someone stop this duel.」

「Should I stop it?」

Noelle looked down and prayed. Then she heard Loic's voice mixed among the audiences' murmurs.

When Noelle turned around, Loic was there standing while smiling.

Loic was looking down on Noelle and gave her a suggestion.

「I'll stop this duel. In exchange, become mine.」

「—Loic, you, even at this kind of time」

Loic was making use of this situation to obtain her. Noelle displayed her disgust to him.

「You are still refusing? —Then, that man is going to die.」

Loic pointed at Leon who was running around inside the arena.

He jumped to dodge the large scythe that Arroganz swung to the side and took a distance.

His body was dirty with the cloud of dust that filled the arena.

He was fighting well even in this situation where he would die instantly if he got hit even once.

But, that was all.

Noelle covered her face with one hand.

「I hate you. I hate you nobles!」

Loic was watching Noelle while talking about Leon's situation.

「I'll settle the matter if that guy let go of the sacred tree's sapling. If you refuse then Barriere House will also join in denouncing the kingdom. The overseas students and their families will become victim because of your fault.」

When she heard that, she realized that if it was Loic right now—if it was Alzer's nobles right now, they would surely have no scruple in denouncing Hohlfahrt Kingdom.

(—This country is rotten.)

Noelle moved her hand from her face and looked toward Loic with tearful face.

Leon and the others would be saved if she accepted Loic's suggestion.

But if she refused, this guy would keep doing unreasonable things in order to obtain her.

(So in the end, you can't defy a noble? No, more like you can't defy the sacred tree no matter what.)

The sacred tree was absolute for the people who were born in the commonwealth.

Noelle—gave up thinking that there was no way for her to get away.

(So the sacred tree still hasn't forgiven those from Lespinasse House.)

It was like she could feel the will of the sacred tree that wouldn't let her get away.

Just when she was going to accept Loic's offer, Louise approached them with determined steps—and slapped Loic's cheek.

「Louise! What are you—buh!」

Louise landed the second slap right away. Then she spoke strongly toward Loic.

「Don't you dare do that dirty act here. Making use of other person's duel to lay your hand on a woman, you're the worst. I can't believe that the next head of Barriere House is making advance on a woman with this kind of despicable method.」

「—Louise, even for someone from Rault House, there are things that you cannot say.」

「I'm just telling you to not get in the way of the duel. Will Pierre really stop if you ask him? Remember this, if you join hand with Pierre—I'll seriously crush you.」

The eyes of the surrounding were gathered on Loic and Louise's conversation.

Narcisse was also here with them. Loic looked like he was thinking that this situation didn't favor him and left.

「T-thank you.」

「—I didn't do it to save you. I just don't want anyone to get in the way of Leon-kun's duel. After all it seems like he has a plan.」

Leon still didn't show any sign of giving up even in front of the despairing situation.

Louise was watching over that situation attentively. It made Noelle suspicious.

「Louise, why are you this fixated with Leon?」

Louise didn't answer Noelle's question.

「It's also strange for the princess of Rault House to side with an overseas student. Besides, it was also the same with Loic just now. Leon would be saved if I who is someone you hate become Loic's possession. You would also be able to obtain the sacred tree's sapling.」

Louise was folding her arms. Her hands were tightly grasping her own arms.

「—I don't need to tell you anything.」

A part of Noelle was also suspecting that Louise was scheming something. But based on what she was seeing, Louise looked like she was genuinely worried for Leon.

But she couldn't imagine the reason why she would be like this.

While the duel where Leon was only running around was continuing, a single airbike landed among the audience seats.

On the bike were Jilk and—Cara along with the dog Noelle.

The airbike's landing caused commotion in the audience seats. Jilk and Cara yelled toward Leon in the middle of that.

「Count Bartfalt! Marie-san has rescued Cara-san and Noelle-chan!」

Cara was also yelling loudly.

「You can beat up that scum already!」

「Woof!」

Even the dog Noelle also barked. At the arena Leon responded to them by lifting up his right hand.

At the arena, Leon proclaimed toward Pierre even in his despairing situation.

「Now there isn't anything holding me back. —Are you prepared?」

Pierre vented his annoyance at Leon after hearing those words.

『Stop dreaming that you can do anything about this situation just because the hostages are freed after this late!』

Pierre's unreserved words caused Louise to angrily say 「Pierre, you are underestimating us」 , while Leon spoke seriously with a low growl that strangely resounded through the arena.

「—I'll teach you something good. I'm actually a coward.」

# **Chapter 11 – Leon’s Turn**

.

## **Part 1**

*I am a coward.*

Silence enveloped the arena just for a moment when I proclaimed that.

Even Pierre in front of me halted for a moment before nitpicking my statement.

〔And here I was wondering what you are going to say, but you’re actually begging for your life now? It’s too late for that!〕

〔Who was begging for his life? I was saying that I’m a coward. Do you understand what this means?〕

〔I have enough. Die already you bastard!〕

〔You keep barking annoyingly with big words. Learn from our Noelle-chan. She is a model dog who almost never bark.〕

Pierre lifted the large scythe when I mocked him to slice my body from up to down.

Marie and the other guys had safely rescued the hostages.

With this there wasn’t any more problem.

Soon it would also be the time for that guy to make his move.

〔DON’T MAKE FUN OF MEEEEEE!〕

I crouched to dodge the approaching scythe and slipped between Arroganz's legs.

Arroganz fell forward when I touched it just a little while passing it.

『Ouch!』

The inside of the cockpit shook from the impact. Even Pierre felt pain from it.

From his next words it didn't seem like he comprehended what just happened.

『S-shi! This junk slipped by itself. It made this great Pierre-sama lost face.』

It seemed he thought that Arroganz slipped by itself and got irritated.

『It didn't slip. It got knocked down.』

『Aa?』

*What is this guy saying?* Pierre was showing such reaction. His reaction wasn't really wrong.

『I told you before. I'm a coward. —I will only fight a battle that I can win.』

『What are you saying—』

『You still don't get it? I thought that I can win if you're the opponent, that was why I accepted this duel. Even with you riding Arroganz and I'm unarmored—I still came out here because I have chances for victory.』

『Hah! Don't get cocky just after getting lucky once!』

Arroganz got up and resumed attacking. It reached out with its left hand to grab me.

I didn't run away and took a fighting stance. I grabbed Arroganz's large finger—and hurled its large body.

Arroganz somersaulted in the air like it was a joke. Pierre who was inside the cockpit also got shaken around and yelled.

『B-bastard!』

I watched Arroganz lying on the ground while rotating my shoulder.

I kept talking to Pierre.

「You are really weak, for real. This is all you got even while riding Arroganz. I've never seen a pilot as bad as you. No, I guess that's goes without saying because you're already the worst as a human?」

『—D-don't think that the flukes will keep happening forever!』

Arroganz stood up and approached, but I hurled it away once more using its own momentum and told Pierre.

「When something happens for the third time then it's already an inevitability. Pierre, you can't win against me.」

.

## Part 2

Just what in the world was going on?

In the arena, all the audiences were unable to believe the scene in front of their eyes.

A flesh and blood human was hurling an armor around three times.

There were even some people inside the venue who were giving applause in admiration.

「Tossing an armor without wearing an armor yourself? Is something like that possible? Is it martial art? No, perhaps it's some kind of magic?」

Narcisse got his interest stimulated even while feeling shocked. Louise warned him.

「Concentrate on the duel.」

「I know. But, this still doesn't change how disadvantageous the situation is.」

But there was another concern.

Leon wasn't wearing armor, while Pierre was inside one.

The situation was still overwhelmingly disadvantageous for Leon. Pierre was in possession of the advantage when they considered the matter of stamina between the two.

Lion was using Arroganz's movement to throw it, but he would have no way to do anything if Arroganz kept its distance.

Louise was worried for Leon.

「He has no way to finish this.」

Even if she wanted to declare Leon the winner, Arroganz could still stand up even after falling down.

There was no decisive blow. She couldn't deem Leon to be the winner as a witness of the duel.

She would be criticized if she declared him the winner in this situation.

Deep in her heart she wished for the match to be decided with a clear winner and loser, otherwise it would complicate the matter.

Narcisse turned his gaze toward Louise.

「Louise, he isn't your "little brother".」

Louise dropped her gaze from being told that.

「I know that.」

「Then, don't side with him too much. He is a foreigner. One day he will return back to his country.」

「—Even I understand that much.」

The situation was progressing to an unexpected direction while the two witnesses were talking.

Clement was running toward Narcisse's position.

He was looking extremely panicked. His face was sweaty with a serious expression.

「Narcisse-kyun!」

「Mr. Clement? Did something happen?」

Clement's appearance made Narcisse thought that Pierre might have done something again, but what actually happened far surpassed his expectation.

「It's awful! Faiviel House is being attacked! They're in a state of war!」

「—What did you say?」

Narcisse looked to Louise in shock.

But Louise herself knew nothing about it.

「Who in the world is attacking them? I never heard that the situation has become that tense with any other country.」

She couldn't think of any country that would attack them with the current international situation.

But, there was actually someone attacking at present.

Clement sent his gaze toward the arena. Arroganz that was piloted by Pierre was floating in the air right now from being thrown by Leon.

「I'm sorry that I only have unconfirmed information, but the enemy is only a single ship of the kingdom. No, right now the ship is registered with the commonwealth though.」

Applauses and cheers were breaking out from the audience seats each time Leon threw Arroganz.

It clearly showed just how bad their evaluation of Pierre's habitual act was.

「—Just one ship? Is Leon-kun's ship rampaging?」

Clement put his hands on his cheeks and wriggled back and forth while stressing that the information he had was still unconfirmed.

「I don't know whether it's the truth or a lie. But, it's a fact that there is war in Faiviel House's territory. I heard that Alzer's combined fleet has been dispatched. That's why please stop the duel and evacuate everyone from here.」

Narcisse made a bitter expression.

「What in the world」

Einhorn was rampaging in the territory of Faiviel House.

The current owner of Einhorn was Pierre.

Louise immediately tried to stop the duel.

「I can't watch this anymore. I'll stop the duel using my name.」

「Got it. Let's declare the suspension of the duel right away.」

Just when the two of them decided to stop the duel, they heard Pierre's voice that was mad with rage from inside Arroganz in the arena.

『HOW DARE YOU MADE FUN OF THIS GREAT PIERRE-SAMAAAAA!  
I'M GOING TO EXPLODE YOU ALL!』

The container on Arroganz's back opened and missiles were fired to the surrounding from there.

「—That guy!」

Louise, Narcisse, and Clement were shocked by Pierre's doing.

The missiles didn't only target Leon, they were also heading toward the audience seats—the shield that enveloped the arena flared up

strongly, but it couldn't endure the missiles' explosions and got destroyed.

The shield just barely blocked the impact, but the smoke that was generated from the explosion filled the audience seats.

.

## **Part 3**

Going back slightly in time.

Around the time the duel was going to be started, Einhorn that was anchored in the harbor started moving.

Pierre's henchmen who noticed that was puzzled by the movement, but they didn't view it as a problem.

「Who is it who moved the ship without permission? Or is there an order from Pierre-san?」

A thuggish sailor who had headache from hangover yawned while walking in Einhorn's corridor.

The scenery outside the window was moving. He could see Einhorn was heading somewhere.

「But still, where is everyone?」

He looked around but found no one.

He continued walking for a while before he saw a cylinder shaped robot that was moving by floating.

The robots were the one managing the airship, so the crews in this ship didn't really have to do anything and could take it easy.

The robot had a single eye with two thin arms attached. The robot didn't have any leg and moved by floating. He didn't understand how it was doing that and didn't care. Then he saw the robot was holding a broom in its hands.

The sailor kicked the robot when it got near.

「Oi, where are the others?」

The sailors' treatment toward the robots was extremely awful.

Normally the robots wouldn't complain or resist even when treated like that.

But today was different.

The kicked robot turned its red eye toward the sailor.

「What? Show me the way already.」

Then the robot lifted up its broom and swung it down on the sailor's head.

「A-asshole! Are you defying me huh!」

The sailor was hit by the broom over and over. He unsheathed the short sword he got on him and prepared to attack the robot.

However, he felt something behind him and turned around.

「—Eh?」

There he found a robot that was even bigger than the cleaning robots.

It lifted up its large and thick arm before swinging it down without hesitation, reaping away the sailor's consciousness.

.

## Part 4

In Einhorn's bridge.

Luxion was floating in there. It was giving instruction to the robots that were moving around nearby.

『The mission has moved to the next phase. The objective is the territory of Faiviel House.』

Pierre's subordinates were in the bridge. They were tied up and left to lie on the floor.

Einhorn was heading to Faiviel House's territory—right to the center of it.

There was a fortress of Faiviel House there. Right now Einhorn was heading there.

However, an unfortunate patrol airship found Einhorn when it was going to enter the territory of Faiviel House without permission. The patrol airship moved in order to block Einhorn's path.

『The airship over there, stop.』

The patrol said that. The tone of their voice was polite. Surely it was because of Faiviel House's family crest that was painted on Einhorn's hull. Luxion remembered the voice that was talking to them through a megaphone.

『—if master is here, he will surely say “lucky” in this time.』

The voice came from the captain who inspected Einhorn when it first entered the commonwealth.

It was the man who insulted Arroganz, someone who Luxion wanted to retaliate against.

## 『Cannon』

The robots moved following Luxion's order.

Einhorn's cannon fixed its aim at the patrol airship and fired without any warning.

The patrol airship got shot in its essential engine at its rear and became unable to move. It then slowly went down while bursting into flames. Luxion saw the crews escaping the ship one after another. The captain of that time was the one who ran at the very front and got onto an emergency boat.

## 『Fire』

Luxion indifferently ordered to attack more. The boat that was boarded by the captain was destroyed by anti-air attack from Einhorn. However Luxion had calculated the height so that the passengers wouldn't die even if they fell.

The captain was crying and screaming for help inside the falling boat.

But Luxion stopped its revenge with that because Killing wasn't "Leon's preference".

『Good grief, it's a pain to rampage according to master's preference.』

Einhorn ignored the sinking patrol airship and continued moving into Faiviel House's territory.

The remaining henchmen inside the airship heard the commotion and started pounding the door to the bridge violently.

「Oi, what have you guys done!」

「That was overdoing it! Return the ship to the harbor right away!」

「Is this Pierre-san's order!? —W-what's with these things? S-stop!  
Don't come here!」

Luxion ignored the noise that Pierre's henchmen were making.

After Luxion entered the territory of Faiviel House—it started destroying important locations, especially the military installations.

The patrol airship immediately called their allies and enemies were gathering one after another.

But they didn't attack because they saw Faiviel House's family crest on Einhorn.

Seeing the patrols Luxion was—.

『Fire』

—sinking them one after another.

It confirmed that the airships were falling to place that had no people while broadcasting voices through amplifier so that the patrols could hear.

『Gyahahaha, we're the strongest!』

『Ora, murder all of Pierre-san's enemies!』

『Keep going until the center like this!』

Those were the voices of Pierre's henchmen.

Luxion had recorded their voices, analyzed them, and then edited their voices into words that suited this situation.

Pierre's henchmen outside the bridge were flustered.

「O-oi, what are you guys doing!?」

「Stop. Oi, stop screwing around!」

「Open the door!」

They must be thinking that this wouldn't end up as a mere joke at this rate.

But it was already too late.

A voice came from the patrol airship's amplifier.

『You bastards! Do you know what you are doing right now!? —Prepare to fire! Hold it back no matter what until reinforcement come!』

The patrol airships were going to fire, but Luxion had no duty to wait for them.

『Fall』

All the patrol airships were sinking after it fired the cannons several time.

Then the sacred tree's crest that was formed over Einhorn started growing vines and roots. It was trying to destroy Einhorn that was moving against Pierre's will.

『What a slow reaction. Also—do you seriously think that you can stop me with just this?』

Legless robots flew out from Einhorn.

Their hands were holding various things like flamethrower or chainsaw. They burned and cut away the vines and roots. And then shining lines ran through Einhorn's hull.

Several lines on the hull emitted light that broke and erased the sacred tree's crest.

『Something like this can be destroyed anytime.』

Luxion decreased Einhorn's moving speed and went around destroying important locations while aiming toward Faiviel House's fortress.

『Now then, there is no problem over here. —I wonder if master is alright over there.』

.

## Part 5

The surrounding was covered by the smoke from the missiles.

Pierre who was watching that from inside the cockpit was desperately moving the control stick.

「W-what the hell! I didn't do anything!」

Pierre didn't know that Arroganz had missiles, and he also didn't plan to attack the audiences. He didn't care at all about the rabbles, but there were also nobles among the audiences including Narcisse and Louise.

And not only that.

「Why is there my voice speaking out there!?」

His voice didn't reach outside from inside the cockpit. Instead at the outside there was—.

『I'll blow up all of you trashes!』

—the voice of someone that was imitating him.

The smoke was gradually clearing up. From there he could see many sacred tree's crests forming up at the audience seats.

Those crests weren't just from Narcisse and Louise. Other members of the six great noble houses who came to watch the duel were also immediately putting up their defense.

「N-no! That wasn't me! I didn't attack you guys!」

Pierre was tyrannical when facing someone of lower status, but when he was facing someone of equal status—furthermore when there was more than one of such people, he wouldn't want to quarrel with them even if he would still put on a tough front.

That was because he understood he would be the one losing if he fought someone of equal status.

『Gyahahaha! All of you bastards are trembling on your feet!』

And yet the voice of someone that was imitating Pierre was picking a fight brazenly against all the people here.

「Stop. Stop it!」

He kept rattling the control stick, but it suddenly got locked in place.

An electronic voice started speaking inside the cockpit.

『The plan will move to the next phase.』

「P-plan!? Oi, one eye! You're listening right!? Obey my order! One eye, answer me now!!」

In respond to Pierre's yell, another voice—Luxion's voice echoed inside Arroganz's cockpit.

『What is it?』

「You son of a bitch, what the hell are you doing!? This garbage is moving around by itself and making trouble for this great Pierre-sama! Stop it right away! Tell Narcisse and Louise that the attack was this armor's fault! Tell them it wasn't my fault!」

『—And?』

「Ha, haa!?」

Luxion's reply to him was cold unlike before.

「Y-you useless familiar! I'll turn you into scrap when I get back. This armor too. It can't even kill that trash over there. This damn thing is splattering mud on this great Pierre-sama's face!」

Pierre kept yelling and complaining that his inability to defeat Leon was Arroganz's responsibility. Luxion said to him.

『You are misunderstanding.』

『Whaatttt!』

『My master is only Leon Fou Bartfalt.』

『W-what are you—』

『You cannot become my owner right from the start. Also, the trash here—is you.』

Pierre gritted his teeth and furrowed his brows. His expression became really ugly from hatred.

『I'll never forgive you. I'll absolutely kill you all!』

Luxion told the angry Pierre.

『It's impossible. You won't be able to kill master. You also won't be able to kill me. But, you were really useful for gathering information. I apologize, you actually aren't completely a useless trash.』

『BASTARDDDDD!!』

Luxion gave its last words to Pierre.

『Accept the retribution for making fun of my master.』

Pierre cursed Luxion and Leon with a shriek before he saw Leon standing in front of Arroganz with a grin.

.

## Part 6

The black smoke from the missiles' explosions was clearing up.

I was taking a stance in front of Arroganz in the middle of the clearing up smoke.

「Arroganz—I'll take you back right away.」

The audiences around us were running around trying to escape.  
Noelle yelled loudly at me telling me to escape.

「Leon, run away! Pierre isn't in his right mind. He is running wild!」

That wasn't true.

Contrary to his words and behavior, that guy was actually a coward.

He harbored an ambition that didn't suit his caliber. In addition he was a man who could do nothing except tormenting the weak.

He would unconsciously harbor feeling of inferiority toward opponent of equal status. The backlash from that made him tormented the weak so that he could obtain a feeling of superiority.

Pierre was even more of a coward than me.

Now then—I got no more need to worry after coming this far.

Arroganz lifted up its sinister scythe.

『After I kill you and obtain the sacred tree's sapling—this Pierre-sama will become this country's king!』

The dirty voice that made such brazen proclamation while cackling was none other than Pierre's voice.

I spoke to Arroganz that was letting out that voice.

「I'll never let Arroganz do such thing. —Pierre, I'll stop you right here and now!」

*I'll stop your ambition!* I said that line with a heroic expression.

But of course this was just a farce.

In the first place, the armor of this world was like the equivalent of a flying tank in my previous life.

There was no way a human could fight such opponent with only his bare hand.

I could throw Arroganz as though I was an expert martial artist was also completely an acting. To begin with I wasn't an expert in martial art. Usually I wouldn't even think to participate in this kind of crazy battle.

—I fought this battle because I could win it!

It would be far more dangerous for me if Pierre came here wearing a normal armor.

Thank you very much for coming here wearing Arroganz!

Louise-san told Pierre to stop the duel.

「Pierre, enough already! I can't allow this duel to continue further than this. I'm declaring this match suspended by my authority as this duel's witness!」

『Just try it! If you do that then I'll just kill this guy and take away the sacred tree's sapling. No one can stop this great Pierre-sama anymore!』

Louise-san showed a shocked expression.

「—You, just what do you think the oath to sacred tree is?」

She was surely dumbfounded that the duel was progressing into this kind of state even though it was being held under the oath of the sacred tree.

After hearing those words, even Louise-san was telling me to run away.

「Leon-kun, run away from there, quickly!」

『It's too late! Die, you trashhhhh!』

「Come at me, Pierre!」

Arroganz was rushing toward me. I ran straight into it and took the preparatory stance to launch a palm strike.

I could hear voices from my surrounding telling me to run away.

Aa~, all these supports felt really warm.

Even though I was showered with jeers when I was at my own country, the people of the commonwealth were rooting for me instead. How kind of them.

Arroganz swung its large scythe. Its blade stabbed deeply into the ground.

「This—is the endddd!」

I dodged while making it looked easy and leaped toward Arroganz's chest—and hit the cockpit's armor with my palm's heel.



A human hitting an armor with their hand wouldn't deal any damage, but my glove shined and Arroganz let go of its large scythe while getting blown backward until it crashed on the wall.

The audience seats became enveloped in silence. I walked toward Arroganz in the middle of such atmosphere and opened the cockpit's hatch.

I found the face of Pierre inside glaring at me—.

「How dare you trick—hibuh!」

—My fist punched Pierre's face.

「Pierre-kun, the duel is still not over.」

Pierre was covering his mouth tearfully.

I grabbed his hair then dragged him out from the cockpit and threw him on the ground.

「Let's fight man to man from here on!」

The fun started now!

Pierre stood up and heaped up vilification on me.

「This cowardly traasssh! You set me up! A trash knight from third rate country like you dare to dishonor this great Pierre-sama who is one of the sacred tree's chosen six great nobles! I'll never forgive you. I'll teach you what'll happen to a mere human who try to set up a chosen human like this great me—agah!」

It felt like he would keep going so I punched him. The glove that Luxion prepared for me was a quality item that would keep my fist from hurting even after punching someone.

I gotta thank him later.

Pierre covered his mouth with his hand and trembled while blood was dripping from there.

Pierre's tooth fell on the ground.

「My tooth. MY TOOOTHHHHH!」

I cracked my fist while telling Pierre with a smile.

「Don't worry. Even Brad who got beaten up by you got his teeth back to normal using healing magic. Magic is really amazing. That's why, there won't be any problem with just that much.」

Pierre glared at me and pointed his right hand forward.

The crest on the back of his right hand started shining.

「Oh? You're going to use your crest—the divine protection of the sacred tree? Look like you have forgotten this duel's rule huh.」

「Uh!」

As expected even Pierre was hesitating to break the rule of a duel that was held under the oath to the sacred tree.

「Now then, I'm going to extract my pay back from you now, so don't surrender too quickly. I have a lot of reasons to beat you up.」

「Y-you're going to beat me up!? You won't get away so easily if you lay your hand on me! I'll slaughter your whole family and country! I'll teach you what'll happen when you turn Faiviel House into your enemy!」

「Oo, scary~」

The reaction of the audiences toward Pierre's threat when he got cornered like this was completely chilly.

Voices of contempt toward Pierre could be heard from everywhere.

「To use his family's power when he is about to lose like this, he is really a scum.」

「To begin with I can't believe he lose against an unarmed human when he himself was wearing an armor.」

「To lose this badly—」

Pierre began to pick a fight with everyone around him after he heard their comments.

「Shut up you pile of garbage! These fucking trashes, these incompetents! All of you can live in this country is thanks to us the six great nobles! You all parasites and shitty insects, how dare you insult this great Pierre-samaaa!」

The reactions of the audiences toward Pierre's rant were frigid.

I placed my hand on the shoulder of Pierre who was looking the other way to make him turned toward me. Then I drove a right straight onto his face.

Cheers broke out right after that.

—This guy, just how hated he is?

「It's not good to look the other way when you're in the middle of duel. Also, I can assure you that I'm a kind and gentle person, but I'm merciless to those who oppose me.」

「What are—fugoh!」

My left hand grabbed his hair and my right hand punched him over and over.

I focused my punches around his mouth so that he would become unable to speak. The main dish would be after that.

「What's wrong? Try fighting back!」

After several punches, Pierre's cocksure attitude was gradually crumbling. He ended up speaking weak words like 「S-stop!」 「D-don't punch anymore」 「I-I get it, I won't tell my family to take revenge so—」 and so on.

He must have few experience of getting beaten up until now because he had been doing nothing but tormenting the weak.

When I let go of his hair, Pierre's face had turned into this extremely ugly thing.

「Hi, hifs fhy hose—」

It looked like he was trying to say something. It seemed he was trying to say 「It's my lose」, but surely I was just mishearing it so I continued the duel.

「You're saying you will never give up!? As expected from someone from the six great nobles Pierre-kun! That guts of yours is really worthy of respect. —Oraa!」

「Bwagh!」

When my front kick hit Pierre's stomach, his body easily folded into the shape of “<”.

The academy also trained the students in martial art, but this guy was weaker than anyone I had ever faced before I was wondering if he was just playing around.

He writhed in pain when my fist struck his stomach.

「S-stahp—」

「So you still won't lose even after this much. That's amazing Pierre!」

Pierre seemed to think that this beating would continue as long as he still stood. He allowed his body to be blown away by my next punch and fell on the ground.

His hand reached out toward the witness Mr. Narcisse to ask for help, but I immediately straddled his body and punched him.

「Do you think it'll be over when you're lying on the ground? It's too bad, I'm not gonna let it end here!」

I thoroughly attacked his mouth so that he wouldn't be able to proclaim his surrender. It caused Pierre's front teeth to be obliterated.

He cried while covering his face with his arms, but I aimed my fist to screw through the gap.

It was amazing that even though I was beating him one-sidedly like this, there were only earth-shattering cheers that came from the audience seats.

「Just how hated are you by everyone huh? I never thought that I will get cheered so loudly when tormenting someone like this in a duel.」

After I said that, Pierre spoke while crying.

「Phlease horfhive me. I, afheathy lhose」

*Please forgive me, I already lose,* Pierre said with a feeble voice. But I mercilessly punched his face again.

Even for me, I should feel pain in my heart after beating someone so one-sidedly like this. But right now my heart didn't even itch because this guy was my opponent.

「—What did you do to those who cried and begged for their life until now? Your naïve wish that you will be forgiven when you're the one begging for your life won't be granted here. Aren't you glad that you have gotten a bit smarter from this lesson?」

I said that and swung my fist on Pierre's nose.

Nosebleed spurted out and splattered on me, but I paid it no mind and continued swinging down my fist.

「Man, you're really a nice guy! I'm not feeling guilty at all even after punching you this many times! Instead doing this even make me start wondering that perhaps I'm actually a champion of justice!」

If I was forced to mention one good point about Pierre, then it would be his use as sandbag that wouldn't make you feel guilty at all.

There were also the cheers from the audiences. It made me felt like I was actually a hero.

Well, I'm not a hero though!

「How is it? How does it feels to be the one on the receiving end of what you had done until now?」

Pierre replied to my question with a weak murmur.

「I'll never forgive you」

*I'll never forgive you*—It looked like his heart still hadn't yielded.

Far from that, this guy still didn't have the slightest intention to reflect on himself. Amazing.

You're really—the perfect baddie.

「Yeah, that's it Pierre! Keep resisting just like that!」

# **Chapter 12 – The One Horned Monster**

.

## **Part 1**

In a complete reversal from before, the audience seats were engulfed in feverish cheers.

Noelle was feeling shocked by that atmosphere even while watching Leon continuing to one-sidedly beating Pierre.

Around her the audiences were returning and went to the front in order to watch Leon's gallant figure from closer distance.

Noelle's surrounding was filled with such audiences.

(But still, to think that no one is moving to stop this)

This was only natural when she thought just what Pierre had done until now.

No—.

(This is the feeling of the people of this country in regard to the six great nobles.)

—It didn't just stop there. There was also their strong feeling of opposition toward the six great nobles who were ruling over them.

Someone from the six great nobles who was in possession of overwhelming power was being defeated one-sidedly by Leon who didn't have the sacred tree's divine protection.

The people here were feeling great excitement witnessing that scene.

Someone who possessed the divine protection of sacred tree and someone who didn't. There was a great wall existing between these two types of people in the commonwealth.

The audiences' discontent toward the six great nobles reached feverish excitement that enveloped them in an abnormal heat.

Noelle's arm was suddenly grabbed while she was watching Leon.

「Lelia?」

Noelle found Lelia there when she turned around.

She was pushing through the audiences in order to reach Noelle. The dense crowd caused her hair and clothes to become ruffled.

「Big sis, come with me for a bit!」

「The duel is still not over.」

「This isn't the time to say something like that!」

Noelle was pulled away from that place by Lelia who was looking really flustered.

Lelia told Noelle about the current situation.

「There is war occurring outside!」

Now that she mentioned it, Noelle recalled Clement saying something like that just now. She turned her gaze toward Narcisse and found him talking with some people.

Narcisse was looking toward the duel arena with a confused expression.

Lelia herself was looking very impatient.

「The plans are all messed up because of their fault. If we don't do something—」

Noelle shook off Lelia's arm while she was saying that.

「—Big sis?」

Lelia looked at Noelle in confusion.

「I'll stay and watch Leon's duel here.」

Noelle walked to watch the result of Leon's duel. Then she heard Lelia's voice from behind her.

「Big sis! Don't get involved with them! They are—!」

.

## Part 2

「Haa~, I'm tired.」

I backed away from Pierre tiredly from punching too many times.

「You, it's amazing that you never got bored from doing this kind of thing. Is it that fun beating up people?」

When I kicked Pierre's head with my toes while asking him, he muttered something unintelligible from his mouth.

「I can't hear what you're saying. Well, I guess it doesn't matter.」

I cackled after saying that. It was then Mr. Narcisse declared the end of the duel.

「Winner, Leon Fou Bartfalt! —Call the doctor here quickly!」

The a doctor wearing a white robe and a nurse entered the arena.

They immediately examined Pierre's condition.

「This is horrible.」

「We'll begin the treatment.」

They efficiently started applying healing magic and first aid treatment to the suffering Pierre.

It seemed the doctor was a skilled one. Pierre's face was gradually going back to normal.

Armed weapon were gathering around us and began to surround Pierre.

Pierre seemed to think of them as his ally who came to help him. His cocksure attitude came back.

—This guy is really easy to understand.

Mr. Narcisse and Louise-san also came down from the audience seats and walked toward us. Then Pierre started protesting to them.

「Narcisse! It's this guy! This guy is a cheating bastard! He set me up in order to win!」

Mr. Narcisse didn't pay attention to that claim from Pierre.

「Pierre, stop with the unsightly act. There is something that we want to ask you.」

It was important to pay attention to your daily behavior.

Mr. Narcisse was looking unusually angry while questioning Pierre.

「Why are you attacking your own family? Even the combined fleet of Alzer has been dispatched now.」

「—Eh?」

Pierre made a face like a pigeon that just got shot by a peashooter.

Even Louise-san was looking angry.

「There is also all the unfairness that you have committed in this duel. There are too many problems with your actions. I wish that we can immediately investigate everything that you have done, but before that order your ship—the ship that you stole from Leon-kun to stop.」

Pierre was showing the expression of someone who didn't understand what he was told.

「Y-you must be misunderstanding. I know nothing about what are you saying. Nothing! It's him! He is setting me up!」

I looked at Pierre who was pointing at me and grinned.

「Ee~, you are the ship's current owner right? On that note, how about you fulfill your promise already.」

Mr. Narcisse spoke to me so that I didn't disturb the discussion.

「Leon-kun, right now isn't the time for that. Pierre's subordinates are using your ship to run wild. If possible I want you to tell us the ship's weakness. It's causing a lot of damage even as we speak.」

I erased my smile and narrowed my eyes.

Some of the people around me even raised their guard seeing my change in attitude.

「—Cooperate? You are telling me to cooperate with this bastard who stole my ship and did such terrible thing to my fellow countrymen? You should keep the sleep talking only when you're asleep. In any case, I'm the victor of the duel. —Pierre, bring Einhorn in front of me right away.」

Veins bulged out on Pierre's forehead and he acted in annoyance.

「That's why, I said I don't know—」

But Pierre seemed to come to understand the situation when he was in the middle of speaking. Color was rapidly leaving his face.

「What? You can't bring it here? Do you forget your oath to the sacred tree?」

He trembled and begged forgiveness to me.

「—I-I'll return it for sure. H-honest! That's why give me time! I'll return it for sure, I'll even give you whatever you want. I'll do anything, so give me just a bit more time!」

Louise-san saw Pierre's reaction and got startled in realization. She turned her gaze toward my face.

「Don't tell me」

—Unfortunately she is too late.

「So you are crying and begging for forgiveness. If it's you will you forgive someone who is begging to you like that? Although—seems like the sacred tree-sama is the one who get angry first rather than me!」

Pierre lost the duel and also unable to fulfill his promise—it seemed that it angered the sacred tree.

A red magic circle formed with Pierre at the center. The people of the commonwealth all jumped out of the way in a flash and took distance from the circle.

Even Louise-san and Mr. Narcisse reacted the same.

I stayed on where I was and looked at the magic circle.

「So this is the so called sacred tree's wrath.」

This phenomenon was written in Marie's note. Apparently a red magic circle would appear if the sacred tree got angered.

And speaking of what this thing would do—

「No. NOOOOO!」

—Pierre cried and bolted away from that spot, but he tumbled when vines grew out from the magic circle and twined around Pierre's ankle.

Then he was dragged back toward the center of the magic circle.

Pierre was crying while grasping on the ground to resist.

「Forgive me! Please forgive me! I won't repeat this anymore! I won't betray your expectation anymore, so I beg you please don't take it away! —I don't want to lose the divine protectionnnnn!」

Louise-san watched Pierre screaming and crying before she closed her eyes and averted her face.

Mr. Narcisse seemed to hold an interest. He was watching Pierre but—he didn't look enthralled.

Me? I'm watching the show with a smile.

「Give it up. This is because you can't keep your promise on top of losing.」

Vines twined around Pierre's body and enveloped his right hand thoroughly.

Snorts dripped down from Pierre's nose when he saw that and he cried even harder.

「—Someone helpp! HELP MEEEE!」

Even Pierre who was that much of an egoist was driven to fear like this by the red magic circle.

This thing was the symbol of fear for those who possessed the crest that was the proof of the sacred tree's divine protection.

After all—this magic circle's function was to strip off that crest.

When everything was over, the vines withered and the magic circle vanished.

Pierre was there doing nothing except shedding tears looking like he was burned out.

「U-uguh!」

I approached him and looked at the back of his right hand. There was no crest there.

I placed my hand on the shoulder of Pierre who had been reduced into this empty shell and whispered into his ear.

「Do you know why your crest is taken away?」

Pierre didn't say anything in reply.

「—It's because you picked a fight with me.」

Pierre looked at my face and trembled.

「I wouldn't go this far if you didn't get cocky and just ignored us, but it's too bad. Well, you were the one who started this fight. Learn from this to do better next time. Ah, there is one more thing. I have been wanting to say this to you.」

I smiled widely and said.

「Pierre, you are a really magnificent clown.」

The face of Pierre who got called a clown crumpled and he started crying while hanging his head down.

Louise-san approached me.

「—You're even more of a bad child than I thought.」

It didn't look like she was seriously criticizing me even while she was calling me a bad child.

「And? Can Leon-kun's ship be stopped? We won't have any other option except destroying it if it can't be stopped.」

—That'll be impossible. Luxion right now will happily turn the table on all the attempts to destroy Einhorn.

I looked toward Arroganz that had gotten decorated with spiky look.

「Well, I'll try stopping it.」

That guy would overdo it if I didn't go there soon. That would be troubling.

.

## **Part 3**

At the sky of Faiviel territory.

A lot of airships were facing Einhorn there in order to stop its advance.

The airships of the commonwealth made their side that was lined up with cannons to face Einhorn, but Einhorn was attacking them one-sidedly from outside their cannon's range.

Behind the commonwealth's fleet there was a very big castle.

It was Faiviel House's castle.

The fleet was desperately trying to protect the castle.

Inside Einhorn's bridge, Luxion was aiming at the fleet's gaps and bombarded the castle from afar.

『It's difficult to land the cannonball at the places where there is no living reaction.』

Faiviel House's personal fleet took flight in order to protect Faiviel House's territory.

In addition the combined fleet that gathered airships from the whole commonwealth also lent their strength in order to sink Einhorn.

Luxion was tapping their communication channel.

『Our cannon cannot reach!』

『For an airship of the kingdom to be this strong—does it has an orb loaded inside?』

『That stupid second son of Faiviel House, just what the hell he is doing!』

From their communication Luxion learned that the enemies were still mistaking Einhorn as the belonging of Faiviel House.

It was fine like that for now.

Luxion observed the situation in the castle using its distance viewing capability. There the head of Faiviel House was unsightly running around.

Luxion bombarded a nearby spot to threaten him, but it was blocked using the crest's power.

『So that's the sacred tree's crest. How very interesting. —Oh?』

The enemy fleet showed a movement.

An airship with remarkable size was charging toward Einhorn.

『So the flagship is launching an assault? That's not an efficient method but, are they thinking that only their flagship can possibly stop Einhorn? —Well, it doesn't matter whatever it is they are thinking.』

The flagship was extremely big with a size that reached a kilometer.

The commander on board of the flagship was yelling.

『Sink it no matter what! We can't let Alzer's fleet be defeated just by a single ship of the kingdom!』

Alzer's legend of invincibility.

Luxion had been investigating various aspects of the commonwealth's army that knew no defeat as long as it was a defensive battle.

『All their airships are installed with a different device that the kingdom is not using. It must be a device that is using the energy

from the sacred tree. I see—those airships can freely use energy with no cost.】

The airships of this world were normally using magic stones as energy to move their engine.

But, the commonwealth's airships were able to use a lot of energy without needing to load a lot of magic stones inside.

With the space for storing magic stones freed up, the amount of weapons and ammunitions they could carry increased and they could also use a lot of energy for their shield.

The airships of the commonwealth were very powerful when they were fighting in their own country.

But, when it came to invading other country, the energy from the sacred tree wouldn't be able to reach them and the airships became nothing but normal airships.

The same applied to their armors.

The drones kept shooting down the armors that flew from the enemy fleet, but their specs were better than the kingdom's armors.

『They are only at this level when the lid is actually opened.】

Luxion lost interest and—charged toward the flagship that was heading its way.

『—Charge!】

Einhorn's prow was designed like a unicorn's horn, but it wasn't just a decoration.

The crews in the enemy flagship were escaping their ship one after another.

Several moments later Einhorn's horn clashed with the enemy flagship's prow—the flagship's prow was easily sliced apart.

『Don't think of Einhorn as a normal airship. —To begin with the likes of Alzer's airship cannot even begin to compare.』

Luxion had been feeling unhappy since the commonwealth's inspection of Einhorn. Now it was venting its anger to the enemy.

Einhorn kept advancing while penetrating the enemy flagship that was five times as big as its own size without pausing. At the end the flagship was bisected into two parts. It was reduced into an atrocious state and sunk down. The crews that were evacuating the flagship using boats could only watch that happening.

There were explosions from the flagship. When Einhorn showed up unharmed from inside the flame and smoke, voices of despair broke out from the enemies.

『It's unharmed!』

『All ships, charge!』

『Stop it no matter what! The opponent is just Hohlfahrt's ship!』

The commonwealth's fleet threw all caution to the wind and attacked, but Luxion got its interest drawn to something else.

The escort drones had just retrieved a green orb that was releasing a faint radiance.

It was the orb that was loaded inside the flagship.

『—This will be a good souvenir for master.』

Luxion retrieved a souvenir for Leon.

.

## Part 4

The commander of the fleet watched the flagship sinking from an emergency boat.

He was watching Einhorn with a look of despair.

「—That kingdom's airship is a monster.」

The reason why he was extremely dispirited was because the commonwealth's fleet that was undefeated in defensive battle until now had just gotten defeated.

He would be able to swallow it if the opponent was a fellow commonwealth force, but the opponent was an airship that was constructed in the kingdom.

He lamented that Alzer's legend of invincibility was ended in his time as fleet commander.

The fleet commander muttered with his eyes fixed on Einhorn.

「We don't have anything else that can possibly stop it—」

Even the flagship was easily destroyed.

The commonwealth had no more method to stop Einhorn.

While he was thinking that, a small ship approached the battleship with a black armor accompanying it.

「What?」

A nearby subordinate who was in charge of the communication reported to the commander.

「Commander, it's an ally! A message under the name of Louise-sama of Rault House say that it will stop the enemy airship!」

The black armor flew toward Einhorn. The drones swarmed it when it got near.

The black armor routed them in a flash and landed on Einhorn's armor before a young man leaped down from inside the armor.

He boarded Einhorn very easily even though they were unable to even get close no matter what they tried.

Seeing that, the commander put his hat over his head until it covered his eyes in resignation.

「It's too late. Even if the airship is stopped now—we have already lost.」

The number of warships that Einhorn had shot down was too many.

The commander turned his gaze toward the ground. Three were the burning wreckages of allied ships as far as his eyes could see.

「—O sacred tree, please bring down the hammer of judgment on that monster.」

The commander prayed to the sacred tree.

.

## Part 5

When I entered Einhorn's bridge, Luxion was waiting for me with drones lining up at both sides.

His red lens was looking at me.

『If only I have five more minutes, I would be able to destroy Faiviel House's castle.』

I laughed at Luxion who was saying such thing.

『You're still the same like usual. Setting that aside, now you are able to understand my greatness after serving under Pierre aren't you? Be glad that you have a wonderful master like me.』

『Certainly Pierre isn't any good. Should I say that it was a nauseating experience? But, isn't it master who caused me to experience such horrible thing?』

『It was you who sided with Pierre without asking. It wasn't my fault.』

I took a step forward and Luxion floated to my right shoulder.

『That was because it would be more efficient that way. Though I don't think master will be able to understand such thing. Thanks to that I was able to learn many things.』

I walked inside the ship and found the place really messy.

It seemed the robots were doing their best to clean the interior, but many ornaments had gotten stolen.

『They're like pirate.』

『That's because more than half of them are actual air pirates.』

「How appalling.」

A drone handed me a shotgun that was loaded with non-lethal bullets while I was feeling surprised by Pierre's circle of friends.

「And, were you able to hear anything interesting?」

『Yes. I was able to investigate about the domestic situation of the commonwealth in detail.』

「That's good.」

『And, what is master's plan now?』

I had beaten up Pierre, but that was just a side show.

The real target was the commonwealth itself.

「I'll teach Alzer just how wide the world is. Perhaps I'll also have them pay the tuition fee too.」

『Master who is teaching the commonwealth about the world by using a super technology like me is no different than them though.』

「I'm just teaching them that there will always be someone above you. With this they will know their place and become a little meeker.」

『Is it fun throwing your weight around using my strength like this?』

「Yeah, it's fun. Nothing beats this feeling.」

We arrived at Einhorn's hangar while we were making such small talks.

Pierre's henchmen were being tied up there.

The hangar had also been messed up badly.

「Damn bastards dirtying other person's airship as they pleased. I'll demand extra fee for the repair expense.」

When Pierre's henchmen saw me, most of them were looking scared. But there were also some among them who were glaring at me.

「Oo, you guys look rebellious.」

A cocksure man who got his arms tied with rope stood up and spoke with a threatening tone. It looked like he didn't know about the situation outside.

「You asshole, how dare—」

I was already tired listening to the bullshit from this kind of people, so I silenced him by shooting the shotgun.

I watched the man falling and writhing in pain while talking to the others kindly.

「Don't talk. And then rejoice. Your boss Pierre has lost against me. He was crying and yelling in disgrace when he ended up losing his divine protection. Congratulations! You guys have lost the backer who can protect you!」

Pierre's henchmen looked at each other hearing that and talked among themselves.

「That's why I said I don't want to do this!」 「When did you ever oppose Pierre-san huh!」 「W-what now?」

They were whispering among themselves so I fired the shotgun to make them quiet.

Then a man wearing academy uniform stood up with an obsequious face.

「S-say~, I'm unininvolved with all this, so will you help me? If you help me, then I'll give a testimony that put you in advantage.」

I turned my gaze to Luxion and he taught me about the man.

『He is lying. That man participated in beating up Jean and Brad. He was even taking the lead in those acts.』

The man's expression changed completely hearing that.

「H-how dare a mere familiar like you is-!」

There was finally no one else talking after I also made that man be quiet with my shotgun.

「Say your excuses to the big shots of Alzer.」

『—Master, an airship of the commonwealth is approaching. It's kicking up a fuss to be allowed to board the ship.』

「Just threaten to sink them down.」

I kindly talked to Pierre's trembling henchmen.

「Now then, I guess I'll beat up you guys until an inch away from death. You guys got no complain right? You have been obeying Pierre and did whatever you liked until now after all.」

I loaded bullets into my shotgun, pump it to chamber the bullets, and aimed the muzzle at Pierre's henchmen.

「—You guys even beat up our Brad and Jean. Allow me to give you guys plenty of thanks.」

I mercilessly pulled the trigger at the bunch who screamed for mercy.

## **Part 6**

The heads of the six great nobles were urgently gathered to have a meeting in the sacred tree shrine.

The topic was about the one horned monster—Einhorn.

「Unbelievable.」

「Our fleet lost against a Hohlfhart's ship!?」

「We should investigate that airship right away!」

The commonwealth never knew defeat in defensive battle, but just now it was dealt an enormous blow by only a single ship. Although the battle didn't continue until its conclusion where they were clearly declared the loser—calling the result as defeat wouldn't be wrong.

The expression of the chairman Albergue was also tenser than usual.

「—Lord Lambert, can you explain just what is the meaning of this?」

Lambert previously only reported that Pierre obtained an airship from the kingdom.

But no one ever imagined in their wildest dream that the airship would actually become this grave of a threat.

Lambert threw a tantrum and shouted like a kid.

「We have to protest to the kingdom! Do you know how great the damage to Faiviel House from this!? It's not just the harbor. Our airships and military facilities were also destroyed! We should send a protest from all the six great nobles!」

Fernand sent his gaze toward Albergue after seeing Lambert's reaction.

「—He can't be talked with. Acting chairman, how is the progress of the negotiation with the airship's owner?」

That was also a problem.

「It's not going well.」

The owner of Einhorn, Leon was claiming 「The owner at that time was Pierre, so it wasn't related to me. Rather I'm the victim here. I'm expecting compensations for all these troubles!」 to the commonwealth.

Leon was exclaiming that the responsibility lay on the commonwealth. Albergue found it hard to understand why his daughter was lending that man her help.

(—Louise, just what are you thinking?)

Lambert yelled 「I didn't do anything wrong!」 . The other five heads were only looking at him in disgust while the meeting was continuing.

.

## Part 7

At Marie's mansion.

I returned there after the duel and watched Noelle-chan lying on the baby bed.

「—She can't eat anything now.」

It was great that one big problem had been resolved, but now it was Noelle-chan that was nearing its limit.

Luxion was looking at Noelle-chan.

『She is living longer than even my prediction. It's surprising.』

I wasn't the only one watching Noelle-chan. Noelle was also there looking worried.

「Will Jean make it in time?」

Noelle-chan had become unable to move, so I sent Marie to head to the hospital.

「He will make it. Even though Marie looks like that, she is actually a skilled healer.」

I had sent her many times to Jean who was in coma and seriously injured, but she said that he still hadn't waken up.

But then the entrance became noisy.

The room's door was opened and rushing inside was Jean who was wearing hospital gown and wrapped in bandages.

「Noelle!」

「Jean! Look, Noelle-chan, Jean is here!」

Noelle smiled to Jean and hurried him to look at Noelle-chan.

When Jean's hand reached out, Noelle-chan's tongue licked it several times. Jean stroked her head gently while apologizing with tears trickling from his eyes.

「I'm sorry. I'm sorry , Noelle.」

Luxion talked to me while I was watching them.

『Her eyes and nose shouldn't be working anymore right now.』

「It's love. Love. Watching something like this make your heart hurts.」

I guess I should be happy that Jean made it in time, but I felt slightly responsible.

Jean's face was messy with tears.

「—Noelle, thank you for everything until now.」

Jean's words made my chest felt painful.

There were too many things I could do with Luxion at my side that it made me felt responsible for all sorts of things that didn't go well.

—This isn't good.

I was just a mediocre person. I couldn't take responsibility for everything. I also must not become so arrogant that I would try to shoulder all responsibility.

Luxion followed me when I moved toward the door to leave the room. *So this guy can also act considerately*, when I thought that, Noelle also moved to follow me out.

「You aren't staying here Noelle? Luxion and I are going out you know?」

「I know. I want to let Jean have time alone with Noelle-chan. This is their family problem after all.」

「—Well, okay.」

I thought that it would be fine even if Noelle stayed here with Jean, but I said nothing while we left the room.

# **Chapter 13 – Insensitive Protagonist**

## **Part 1**

I left Jean and Noelle-chan inside the room and talked with Marie outside.

Marie was making a tired expression at the mansion's backyard while handing a thick bundle of paper to me.

「Get some sleep if you're tired from healing.」

「I-I won't be able to feel relieved unless I have hand this over.」

I flipped through the documents that Pierre gathered to read them briefly. The papers were filled with various data about the items that Pierre had embezzled.

Luxion peered into the documents.

『Oh, isn't this the transaction record with those merchants?』

「He would keep the record of illegal transactions like these around?」

『Perhaps he didn't fully trust Pierre? He must be keeping them around as his trump card when the time he needs them ever come.』

「H~mm」

Apparently that merchant even dealt in the 「orb」 that was forbidden to be leaked to outside.

Based on the law of the commonwealth, this was undoubtedly a crime that was worthy of the capital punishment.

「—This increased our blackmail materials.」

『Master, you are making a wicked expression.』

「My face has been like this since I was born, so people often misunderstood. That really makes me sad.」

When I laughed, Marie's gaze were wandering around uneasily.

「T-that, big bro—I-I'm sorry!」

And then she kowtowed. Seeing that made me felt regret from overdoing it a bit.

「The matter this time is my responsibility. I'll be more careful next time so please forgive me!」

The tattoo that looked like collar around Marie's neck had vanished. The curse of the sacred tree had been dispelled.

「—It's good that the curse has been dispelled.」

「Eh?」

I lent my hand to Marie when she lifted her face and helped her to stand up.

「Did you seriously think I was angry to you?」

「Because! Big bro's face was frightfully scary at that time mon!」

I didn't know what to say seeing my little sister from my past life using cutesy saying 「mon!」 even though she should be an auntie at the inside.

『Luxion already obtained the information when Pierre was picking a fight with you guys.』

「Eh!?」

Luxion nodded.

『Yes. However, the information was lacking so I decided it would be dangerous to fight at that time. At the same time it was a good chance to infiltrate Pierre's circle of friends, so I changed side without consulting master.』

Marie seemed to be relieved and powerlessly fell on her knees like a doll that got its string severed.

Her complexion also became better. She even became tearful.

「Say that from the beginningggg! I was really scareddd!」

「It's better for the number of people who know something like this to be as few as possible.」

I held the documents from Marie under my arm, but then Marie suddenly muttered 「Hah!」 with a panicked expression.

「B-but, what will become of Pierre now? I don't know if he will be able to return to the academy after big bro crushed him so thoroughly like that. And what if this caused Alzer to go to war against the kingdom?」

Even I had thought about the risk that Marie uneasily mentioned, but I had run out of patience of just staying quiet without doing anything.

Besides. —It wouldn't become a war.

「I don't think there will be any war. I showed Einhorn's power so that it won't happen. But, the chance of Pierre returning to the academy is low just as you said.」

「Isn't that a big problem!? The event of Pierre making trouble for the heroine is a major event at the middle stage!」

Certainly it was an important event in order for the heroine to decide who she was going out with.

However—I felt that it would be a mistake to make Noelle went out with someone just for that.

After all she was that close with Jean, so I thought it would be better to keep watching over them.

Besides, there was an insurance.

「No problem. After all it seems Emile is being serious in his relationships with Lelia.」

Luxion continued my explanation in a way that Marie could easily understand.

『Emile is seriously considering to marry with Lelia. Also in regard to the sacred tree's crest, it seems that the condition to inherit it is mostly decided by one's bloodline.』

「What do you mean?」

『—Noelle and Lelia are twin sisters. This means both of them have the possibility of becoming the priestess.』

There would be no problem in choosing the priestess. And if the priestess got selected then she would be able to select the guardian next.

The problem would be solved if Lelia got chosen as the priestess and then Emile became the guardian.

If the worst case happened and Noelle got chosen, her lover candidate Jean could just become the guardian. Could he become one?

Well, he wasn't one of the capture targets, but there shouldn't be any problem.

In any case, the danger to the world could be evaded like that.

「Then everything will be fine!」

Marie looked relieved once more while Leon was thinking that he was glad for sending Luxion to Pierre's side. Because of that Luxion could ask about various things from Pierre and also investigated about the domestic situation of the commonwealth in great detail.

〔But, there is also one question that came out from this.〕

「Question?」

I asked Luxion about this question that he had, but then Noelle came running to the backyard.

「Leon!」

I was able to guess what happened from her expression.

Noelle's sad expression must mean that Noelle-chan had passed away.

.

## Part 2

Jean thanked me with eyes that were red from crying while holding on Noelle-chan's ashes.

「I'm really in your debt. I will surely pay back the hospital and healing expenses one day.」

I looked at Jean hugging the box that was filled with the ashes and scratched my head while refusing him.

「I don't need it.」

「But」

「I'm already using the incident this time to obtain money. I'm going to be absurdly rich after this, so just consider the healing and hospital expenses as a service.」

Jean looked down with a troubled look before he smiled.

「You're really kind count.」

「—I wonder about that.」

I couldn't say that this was my atonement for forsaking him.

「You took care after Noelle while I wasn't there. Count, you're kind.」

I changed the topic without replying to that.

「Does it look like you'll be able to return to the academy?」

「Yes. But, it looks like the academy will be closed for a while. That's—it seems there are various things happening.」

Well, that was my fault.

The six great nobles of Alzer were arguing about how to treat us around this time.

「Those matters will get taken care soon. You just get along well with Noelle.」

Jean looked slightly surprised at my words. But he nodded.

「E-err—yes」

—Could it be, this guy was really an insensitive protagonist type?

Didn't he notice Noelle's feeling? Oi oi, spare me from that.

「Let's ignore the details for now, just take it easy for a while. Ask Marie to take a look if your body feels painful.」

「Thank you very much for everything.」

Jean bowed his head deeply. I watched him off before setting out to take care the next matter.

—Time to wring out compensations from Alzer!

.

## **Part 3**

Louise was called back to the mansion of Rault House.

She got questioned by her father Albergue about the incident this time inside his office.

「Louise, why did you do something like that?」

Louise was hanging her head down. Albergue was unable to question her too harshly because he knew that the fault lay with the commonwealth. However his position as a politician forced him to criticize Louise's decision.

「You are a citizen of Alzer Commonwealth. You have the duty to prioritize your country's wellbeing.」

Louise only replied 「I understand」 with a faint voice.

「Certainly Pierre had overdone it in this matter. But it'll be a problem if the sacred tree's sapling is staying in the possession of someone not from this country. Besides, Einhorn was it? That airship is a great threat.」

To be honest he wished that he could obtain both of them.

If it was impossible then he wanted to obtain even just one of them, but currently both items were in the possession of Leon.

For Albergue who had to negotiate with Leon in the future, this would make the negotiation to be a difficult one.

「Father will understand when you meet Leon-kun.」

Louise's words made Albergue's eyes narrowed in anger.

「I won't tell you to forget about Leon. But, don't forget that your attitude has also driven Serge to a corner. Listen to me Louise—Leon is dead.」

Louise bit her lower lip and clenched her hands to hold back her tears.

(It's rare for her to be this fixated.)

He thought that his tomboy daughter had matured to be a composed lady.

But looking at what had transpired this time, as expected it seemed that she had been forcing herself somewhat.

「Louise, there is also the matter of Serge to consider. Don't mention about Leon too much in front of him.」

「I know.」

「—You can leave.」

Albergue sighed deeply after Louise exited the office.

He put his elbows on the table and folded his arms to put his forehead there.

「There is nothing but problem.」

After saying that he pulled a locked drawer and took out a photo from there.

There was the image of an energetic looking five years old child there. The picture was smiling.

The black haired boy was hugging Louise who was also still a child from behind in the picture.

—The boy was his son who had passed away, Leon Sara Rault.

He passed away when he was five years old because of disease.

「—Leon, if only you're still alive」

If he was still alive, he should be right around the same age with Leon—with Count Bartfalt.

Albergue became fed up with himself who was wondering about what if his son was still here.

「If only Serge can at least settle down」

He grumbled about his adopted son Serge who still hadn't returned to the academy before returning the photo back into the drawer and returned to his paperwork.

.

## **Part 4**

The next day at the venue of the negotiation with Leon.

Albergue was unable to hide his shock.

Fernand who was at his side was worried for him.

「Acting chairman, is something the matter?」

「N-no, it's nothing.」

He said that while coming to understand why Louise was lending that much help to someone from the kingdom.

Leon's appearance was exactly like the appearance of his son if he grew up to this age.

He was a young man with black hair and black eyes and average look that felt like it could be found anywhere, but his air reminded him of his son.

There were so many similarities, but Leon himself was acting impudently toward them while holding the case of the sacred tree's sapling in one hand.

「Eh, what did you say?」

Lambert's face was flushed red. Leon was provocatively asking back to him.

「Don't make me say it more than once! I'm saying that Faiviel House has received enormous damage because your airship was rampaging. I demand that you pay the compensation for those damages.」

「I can't hear you~」

He was acting like the heads of the six great nobles who were gathered here were beneath his notice.

The other heads were also looking irritated. But they were wary toward Leon who was in possession of the sacred tree's sapling.

(—Did he hear something about the sacred tree's sapling from Louise?)

Leon didn't look nervous at the slightest in front of them who possessed the sacred tree's divine protection.

Was his attitude based on ignorance, or was it because he was fully aware of their circumstance—Albergue couldn't decide which was the case here.

Leon asked them with the case on his hand.

「By the way, it looks like you are asking me to take responsibility but—are you guys really alright with that?」

「It was obviously your fault!」

「Lord Lambert, we should also listen to what he has to say. Now then, Count Bartfalt, what do you mean that it's misplaced for us to ask you to take responsibility?」

Albergue shut up Lambert otherwise the negotiation wouldn't progress.

「Do you even need to ask? We got tricked to agree with this sacred tree's oath thingy and our crown prince got fitted with a cursed collar. What's more my airship got stolen, and yet Pierre who did all that and even run wild with the ship didn't get blamed at all. Now why do I am the one who is asked to take responsibility? Even though I'm the one who stopped Einhorn's rampage. This is what they called returning evil for good.」

Leon complained incessantly, but he was smirking all along.

He didn't know what this young man was thinking inside.

「—Well, let's set aside the public pretense here. If you guys are making all these to be my responsibility then that means you guys are ready for the consequences right?」

「Consequences you said!?」

Lambert made the talk stopped, so the other heads glared at him to silence him.

Leon continued his talk while grinning.

「You guys experienced an overwhelming defeat from facing just a single ship of the kingdom. If you make this Pierre's responsibility then it will only end as a shameful incident between yourself, but if you make it my responsibility—then won't that means the end of your myth of invincibility? The record of being undefeated in defensive battle will end here!」

It was Fernand who reacted calmly to that statement.

「I wonder about that. In reality you didn't fight at all at that time, and the battle also wasn't concluded. It was stopped in the middle. That battle was more like a draw.」

Leon turned his gaze toward the bluffing Fernand and showed a smile of someone who had seen through him.

「Then feel free to put the responsibility on me. It will be the end for you guys at that moment. How many ships got shot down just by a single ship? Was there even one of your ships that managed to scratch Einhorn? —Who said that the kingdom only has one Einhorn?」

Fernand tried to lighten the mood.

「You're quite short tempered aren't you sir hero?」

「Short tempered? If I'm really short tempered then Faiviel House would have become a sea of fire around this time.」

Albergue briefly glanced at Lambert clenching his hands in frustration before taking Fernand's place in negotiating with Leon.

「I understand what you want to say. And, what are you demanding from us?」

「Some compensation for the start. If you can't prepare money then I'm fine with accepting goods. I'll report what happened this time as mere quarrel between yourselves, so you should also include hush money along with the compensation for the damage we received in this incident. Of course you have to include a formal apology too.」

「—I see.」

Leon was saying that 「I'll protect your honor and pride. So give me money」 .

Lamberg slammed his fist on the table.

「This bastard has been saying whatever he like just because I've been staying quiet! We have never lost against Hohlfahrt until now!」

Leon's smile still didn't break down.

「Then let's have at it for real next time, —commonwealth-san that is only undefeated in defensive battle. Ah, if you guys put the responsibility with me then I guess you'll also get black mark in your defensive battle record. Your legend of invincibility is going to be finished with this!」

The heads' expressions turned bitter hearing those words.

If it became known that they lost against the kingdom, other countries would also look down on them.

The demerit from such thing would be immense.

In addition now that there was the possibility of other countries developing powerful airship, they couldn't easily try to solve their problem through war anymore.

Albergue considered the incident this time as a good opportunity.

(Hmm, it's not bad. Rather, this is convenient.)

「—Very well. Alzer will prepare monetary compensation for you.」

Fernand protested at Albergue who accepted the conditions easily.

「Acting chairman, are you planning to accept his demand as it is?」

「The fault of the incident this time lies with Alzer. Alzer will sincerely apologize.」

It was a bad decision as the acting chairman, but personally Albergue wanted to make a good use of the incident this time.

—For the sake of his own objective.

But, Albergue apologized to his daughter inside his heart.

(Louise, you must be feeling like this too.)

The image of Albergue's son overlapped with Leon in front of him. He slightly regretted that it caused him to soften when dealing with him.

He couldn't criticize his daughter like this.

Leon was surprised.

「—Eh, you're really going to accept my terms?」

It looked like he didn't expect for all his demands to be accepted.

「Is it surprising?」

「—Well, yeah.」

Seeing Leon's impudent attitude from just now going away made Albergue thought that this might be Leon's base attitude.

「We have made you gone through unpleasant experience while studying here. My apologize. Also, this is only a suggestion from me as an individual but—」

.

## **Part 5**

Fernand drew near Albergue after the negotiation with Leon was over.

「Acting chairman, the kingdom will grow bold with this. Please think it over again.」

Fernand was young and extremely capable, but he had a strong patriotic feeling.

Because of that he was sensitive in the matter that brought disadvantage for the commonwealth.

「We should close our eyes to this little loss. We have just obtained a good opportunity to reform our awareness.」

「Awareness?」

「The thinking that we will forever be prosperous by relying on the sacred tree is old.」

Fernand was shocked.

「Acting chairman, isn't your statement just now too controversial?」

「What's controversial about it? The assessment of foreign countries toward Alzer that has been completely relying on the sacred tree while looking down on them is terrible. At the same time our sense of danger toward foreign countries is too lax.」

Fernand too seemed to have some idea about what Albergue was saying. He was unable to argue back.

「—It seems you're inviting that person to your mansion, but will that really be alright? He is a man who would pick a fight even with us.」

「He is in the possession of the sacred tree's sapling. I wish to have another angle where we can negotiate with him.」

「That's certainly necessary but, it doesn't have to be the acting chairman dealing with it personally isn't it?」

「I'm also personally interested with him.」

He listed various reasons, but he personally wanted to talk with Leon.

(He keeps appearing in my mind even though I know he isn't my son. Is it because the two of them is just that similar?)

Albergue recalled his son.

.

## Part 6

I was invited to come to Rault House's mansion several days after the negotiation.

The reparations for me had been paid immediately while Alzer was also holding negotiations with Hohlfhart Kingdom between the officials of both countries. It would be funny if Roland got saddled with hard work because of it so I didn't touch that side at all.

Rault House went as far as preparing an airship for me to bring me to their territory—into their stronghold in their floating island for a dinner.

It was a fortress city. It had a different atmosphere from the former Lespinasse territory.

「This place feels like it belongs to the king of a country.」

I muttered that in a small voice. Luxion who was camouflaging itself whispered into my ear.

『—Master, I believe the risk of assassination is low, even so please don't let your guard down.』

Luxion was going around investigating the huge castle while he was waiting in the waiting room.

It thoroughly investigated various things like whether the food that would be served was poisoned or not. The result—it seemed that Leon was really invited just for a dinner.

「Are they trying to win me over because they desire the sacred tree's sapling?」

〔That's the likely possibility. It seems they are also considering about exchange of technology. —However, the situation seems strange even despite that.〕

「Strange? Is there some kind of problem?」

〔The servants who saw master's face would get agitated. Many of the veteran servants are especially flustered.〕

The servant who showed me around was also like that.

He looked really surprised.

「Louise-san was also looking surprised when we first met. At that time—she asked me “call me Onee-chan” or something like that.」

〔Is she someone with that kind of hobby?〕

「If she is serious about becoming my big sister than I hope I can exchange Jena with her.」

I shed tears when I recalled my biological little sister who must be having it hard right now in the kingdom.

If I could really exchange her with Louise-san, I was confident that I would instantly say 「Change please」 .

A servant came to inform me that the preparation had been finished while I was talking with Luxion.

.

## Part 7

Inside a room with very high ceiling.

I was eating dinner with three other people around a large table. It was a really strange sensation to eat like this.

There were servants on standby around us. They would assist us with our dinner.

Albergue-san was sitting right in front of me. Louise-san and Albergue-san's wife were sitting at his sides.

The two of them were wearing dress.

The dinner atmosphere was truly like the dinner of noble—no, the dinner of royal family even.

The dishes had become a bit cold but they were still delicious.

「Do the dishes suit your taste?」

Albergue-san asked me. I spoke of my impression without any flattery.

「They're delicious. The sauce is different from what we have back in the kingdom, but I like this foreign taste.」

Food seasoning would differ based on the country, but I could eat without any problem.

The soft meat was accompanied by a kind of vegetable that couldn't be found in the kingdom.

When I tried eating it—it had a bitter taste.

I could eat it, but it wasn't something that I would want to eat by my own initiative.

I forced myself slightly to put it into my mouth along with some meat to cover up the taste. But then I noticed the three in front of me were staring fixedly at me.

「Eh, err—is my manner bad or something?」

「N-no, that's not it. Do you perhaps—dislike that vegetable?」

It seemed he had sensed from my expression that I disliked this vegetable.

「It's a vegetable that I had never eaten in the kingdom. I dislike its peculiar bitterness, but I still can eat it just fine.」

「I-I see.」

I was getting dubious seeing Albergue-san's flustered look, but then his wife suddenly shed large drops of tears. She said 「Forgive me. I have to leave my seat for a bit」 and stood up.

Louise-san talked to me as she left the room with a servant accompanying her.

「Sorry for that. Mother will return soon. She doesn't leave because she hates Leon. I hope you can understand that.」

「—Can you tell me the reason?」

I was feeling dubious with the atmosphere of this place. Then Albergue-san talked to me while casting his gaze down slightly.

「I had a son.」

「Do you mean Serge-san?」

「I don't mean my adopted son Serge, but my biological son. His name was—Leon.」

—Another story that I never heard before came out. But I felt some puzzle pieces falling into place hearing that.

That must be the reason Louise-san was lending me her help cordially, because I was similar with that son.

「So it's something like that.」

「I hope you don't take offense. I myself never thought that you will be this similar with that boy.」

「I've heard a saying before that in the world there would be at least two people who look just like yourself. Well, this is surely just a coincidence.」

Albergue-san smiled sadly while muttering 「You're right」 .

Louise-san smiled at me.

「Leon—my little brother also hated that vegetable. Lion-kun looked just like him when you forced yourself to eat it. It must have caused mother to remember many things too.」

There was a boy who had the same name with me who died when he was five years old.

Now that they mentioned it, I recovered my memory from the past life was also when I was five years old.

It felt like there was a connection here, or perhaps it was just a coincidence?

「Which reminds me, Serge-san isn't coming to the academy right now isn't he? Where is he right now?」

I tried asking because I never caught sight of Serge, but then Louise-san's expression clouded slightly.

「He went out during spring break and never returned until now. He would get in touch periodically, so at least we know that he is alright.」

「He is out?」

Albergue-san said 「He is a troublesome child」 while explaining slightly to me.

「I heard that the job of adventurer is deemed acceptable in the Hohlfahrt. But it cannot be said as a respectable job here in Alzer.」

This place was different from the kingdom, the social standing of adventurer here was low.

「Serge—my son has a longing for the adventurer job. When the holiday came he used an airship and went out for an adventure. If it's you can you understand Serge's feeling?」

「I too obtained my current position by achieving success as an adventurer, so I can understand him somewhat.」

—In my case my life would be in danger unless I succeeded though.

I couldn't understand the feeling of someone who was born in a rich family and went to an adventure because of his own liking.

I guess Serge would have better affinity with Julius and others rather than with me.

「Perhaps if he talk with his highness Julius and the others, they will hit it off with each other.」

「Then I should provide them a chance for that, for the sake of the future too.」

Louise-san showed dissatisfaction to Albergue-san's reply.

「—I won't recognize Serge. For him to aim to become something like adventurer even though he will be the next head of Rault House, he is unsuitable.」

Albergue-san warned Louise-san for her words.

「Louise, the way you say that is rude toward Leon-kun.」

「I-I'm sorry.」

「It's alright. But, won't it be problematic that he hasn't returned even the academy has started?」

Our plan went out of order because Serge wasn't there.

I wanted to at least heard the reason.

Louise-san looked down.

「That child was just in his rebellious phase. He just wanted to make trouble for us.」

「—Louise, enough with that. I'm sorry, we are exposing our family's shame to you like this and ruined the dinner.」

Albergue-san apologized to me, so I replied 「It's fine」 and returned to my meal.

Even so, was I really that similar with his son who had passed away?

I felt refreshed now that I understood the reason of Louise-san's request to call her Onee-chan, but it seemed there was still something deeper about the relationship of Rault House with Serge.

.

## **Part 8**

「How nice! Big bro went to have an extravagant dinner by yourself, I'm jealous~!!」

When I returned, Marie welcomed me with an undisguised jealousy.

Several weeks had passed since I was intruding in Marie's mansion.

My days here were filled with a lot of boisterousness.

「I didn't go to play you know?」

「But, the meals were luxurious right?」

「It was delicious~」

Marie bit on her handkerchief with a frustrated look when I told her my impression.

That was why I handed her the cake I brought back as souvenir.

「Here, souvenir.」

「Wa~i, I love you big bro!」

It was easy to handle Marie seeing her mood brightened like this by giving her cake.

I didn't want to believe how there were five idiots whose life got messed up because they got seduced by this kind of woman.

I entered an empty room with Marie who was holding the cake and prepared tea.

「Big bro, where is Luxion?」

「He is repairing Einhorn. Luxion's main body is coming to this side, so it will finish in several days.」

Luxion also mentioned about overhauling Arroganz.

Apparently he would remove the spiky decorations and cleaned the cockpit that had been used by Pierre.

Einhorn too only got its interior dirtied, so rather than calling it repair, it would be mainly cleaning and resupplying the ship.

「His main body wasn't already here before?」

「Before this it was floating in the middle of Alzer and Hohlfahrt to act as relay. But the main body is sent here because of the troubles that occurred at this side. Thanks to that I now also cannot send mail to Ange and Livia.」

Right now I couldn't send any mail because the communication signal was extremely bad.

I wondered if the two of them were alright right now.

Marie took out the cake with sparkling eyes.

「This looks delicious!」

「Don't eat all of them. It's also the share for the others.」

「I know that.」

Marie took out the cake and waited for me to prepare the tea while talking about the plan going ahead.

「By the way big bro, how was the talk going?」

「—It's going too well that I'm getting scared instead. Everyone of Rault House took a liking to me.」

To think that they had a dead son who looked exactly like me—I still couldn't believe it.

「Is it going to be okay? They're the last boss.」

「I'll be on my guard.」

I finished preparing the tea and enjoyed the cake together with Marie.

I watched her eating the cake while taking out some cash that was placed inside a brown envelope from my breast pocket.

「Marie, I'll give this to you.」

Marie's eyes widened the instant she saw the money.

Her excitement surpassed her excitement for the cake.

「B-big bro, this is!」

「This is because I managed to extort a lot from Alzer. Well, this is pocket money for you.」

Marie had worked hard too this time, so this was her reward.

I also learned something from living together with Marie.

—She is a bit, no, not just a bit, she was simply pitiful.

She had to take care of those five, in addition she had to economize in order to make do with the available household budget. I couldn't hold back my tears seeing that.

Marie took out the cash and started counting it.

「I-i-i-i-is it alright for me to receive this much!?」

The amount of money I gave her was around ten million in the form of commonwealth's paper money.

But, even that amount was a bit insufficient in order to live in Alzer while taking care of those five.

「You guys have worked hard too this time. Use the money carefully okay?」

Marie cried while clinging on me.



But she did that only after carefully putting the money into her pocket.

「Oniii-chan, thank youuuuu!」

I shook off Marie who was clinging on me.

「L-let go! Really, you are still a calculating girl just like in the past life.」

Marie wiped her tears.

「With this I won't need to worry about the money for summer clothing.」

The season was going to change from spring to summer.

「Summer huh? There will be a lot of events there. For now Lelia is our priestess candidate, but depending on the situation Noelle might become the one, so we've got to be careful.」

When I said that, Marie stopped her hands that were counting the money she took out from her pocket.

Marie looked at my face and tilted her head.

「Big bro? Why are you considering Noelle a priestess candidate?」

「Ha? Because Noelle like Jean right? But you know, that Jean is really insensitive, he still hasn't noticed Noelle's feeling for him. It will be a bit difficult for them to become lovers like this, but they will manage somehow if we give them a push in the back.」

I wished that insensitive protagonist Jean would be a bit more proactive.

If he liked her then said it clearly to her.

「—Big bro.」

「What?」

「I don't think Noelle is in love with Jean. To be more exact, she likes him but not in the romantic sense, just normal like.」

「Eh? But, they are close with each other.」

「They are just being friends with each other aren't they? Noelle isn't that conscious toward Jean.」

—What is she saying?

「Eh, but Jean himself, toward Noelle he is really—」

「From what I see, the two of them are just normal friends. Rather—big bro, could it be you really haven't noticed? You're joking right?」

I didn't understand what Marie wanted to say.

「Eh, don't tell me the two of them are just friend with each other?」

Marie looked at me with a cold gaze when I said that.

「—I don't care anymore.」

「No, tell me! You are making me concerned here!」

Marie put the money into her pocket once more and started eating the cake.

「It will become troublesome so I won't say it. Also, it'll be better for big bro to properly think about what to do now. Something that

cannot be undone will happen if you keep living together with Noelle like this.]

Something that cannot be undone?

「Don't tell me, you are thinking that I'm going to fall in love with Noelle? Too bad. I have two wonderful fiancées waiting for me back home. I won't do something like cheating.】

Marie scoffed at me.

「—I wish big bro the best with that. I don't like trouble after all.】

What's with this girl?

Just what is it that she wanted to say?

# **Epilogue**

.

## Part 1

Curtis, a scholarship student in the kingdom's academy came to the male toilet.

He intended to arrange his hairstyle using the mirror in the boy dormitory's toilet.

However, there was a preceding visitor there.

「Oh, aren't you—」

When he called that person, the person stuffed something into his pocket in surprise to hide it.

「N-no, this isn't how it looks like!」

Curtis smiled to calm down the flustered person.

「I won't tease a boy who is concerned about his own appearance you know?」

This person did something in front of the mirror before he entered, but surely he was only doing something to tidy up his appearance just like what he planned to do.

That person—Aaron looked embarrassed.

But, it was there Curtis felt something out of place.

(It doesn't look like he has just arranged his hair style—more importantly, his lips looks really glossy.)

It didn't seem like lipstick, but those lips were too vivacious for a boy.

In addition was Aaron's hairstyle.

Previously his hairstyle looked wilder, manlier, and yet recently his hairstyle was set to be neat and tidy.

His previously slovenly way of dressing had also become neater.

This person had a slightly rough attitude before. He was a type that Curtis wasn't really good with but—the current Aaron looked more graceful and tactful than before.

Aaron seemed to notice that Curtis's gaze was looking at his lips. He hurriedly made an excuse.

「T-t-t-this is lip cream!」

「Lip cream?」

「You know, your lips will feel chapped when the air is dry right!? I'm using some cream to prevent that.」

「I-I see.」

(Is the air really that dry even though it's not winter anymore? He must have it rough.)

Aaron looked embarrassed when Curtis sent him a worried glance and he left the male toilet.

「S-sorry to take your time. I'm leaving now.」

I'm leaving now—those words also gave him an out-of-place feeling. Males would often use those words too, but the way Aaron said them just now felt strangely feminine.

Curtis followed Aaron's disappearing back before he noticed another strange thing.

「Hm?」

Aaron bumped into a male acquaintance just as he got out of the toilet.

「Aaron, you look pretty too today.」

「Geez, everyone keep saying that.」

A lot of 「!？」 mark floated above Curtis's head.

(W-what's this? Why is Aaron that intimate with a male student? I thought he was chasing around female students before—)

He remembered seeing Aaron hitting on female students in the academy together with other students who looked like delinquent.

But there was something strange with the current Aaron.

(Thinking back, recently it feels like he is always together with other boys—d-don't tell me)

Curtis felt a slight chill on his back.

.

## Part 2

It was noisy in Marie's mansion since the morning.

「Is the breakfast not done yet~?」

Greg was sleepily lying on the table while demanding breakfast. Kyle made snide remark seeing Greg like that.

「The breakfast will finish faster if only Greg-san will help us out.」

「I'm an eating specialist. Besides, you should tell that to Baltfalt too.」

I was also waiting for the breakfast to be served while doing nothing.

However Kyle shook his head.

「The count is different because he paid the food expenses.」

—The power of money is truly mighty. I don't get scolded even while I'm doing nothing to help.

Julius and Jilk also entered the dining room while I was waiting.

「What is the plan for today?」

「There will be questioning in the embassy. It looks like the kingdom dispatched someone to investigate about the incident this time.」

The two of them were talking about work right from the morning. The next one who appeared after them was Brad whose injuries were almost healed.

「What is it for breakfast today?」

He asked Cara who came to place the plates on the table.

But Cara yelled angrily at him.

「Please don't get in my way! Come on, sit on your seat everyone!」

Kyle and Cara were coming and going between the kitchen and the dining hall busily.

The voice of Marie—and Noelle could be heard from the kitchen.

「Noelle, take care of that one please!」

「Okay~」

Noelle had the appearance like a gal, and yet she was good with all kinds of housework.

Was this what they called gap moe?

Chris also came dripping with sweat while we were waiting.

「That was a good work out.

Greg complained seeing Chris sweaty like that.

「You're making the morning feel sweltering looking like that. Go take a shower first.」

「You yourself doesn't look fully awake. How about you go wash your face first before saying that?」

Brad shrugged seeing the two readying themselves to fight.

「You two are energetic right from the morning. Well, this is just like you two musclebrains.」

Greg and Chris changed focus to Brad after hearing that.

「It'll be better if you train yourself a bit more though.」

「Yeah. If you do that then you won't end up like this time.」

Brad pointed at the two of them and retorted back.

「You two also wouldn't be able to do anything if you were the one at my place!」

Marie entered the noisy dining hall and lifted up a fry pan that she hit with a ladle in place of a bell.

「Come on be quiet all of you! The breakfast will be served so eat without complaining!」

She was like a childcare worker who was taking care of kindergarteners.

The foods that were served on the dining table were corn soup and—toasts that looked familiar to me.

「Ah, this is」

I thought they looked nostalgic. It was something that my mother in my past life often made for breakfast.

The toast had a sunny-side up fried egg and two bacons placed on it—even the arrangement was the same like my mother's toast.

I was wondering whether Marie also remembered mother's cooking while feeling very nostalgic.

Noelle came to my side.

「Leon, there is an excess bacon so I'll give you one more.」

「Is that alright?」

「It's alright.」

Julius who was eating his toast saw that I was the only one with extra bacon and became jealous.

「Only Bartfalt got the special treatment? I'm jealous.」

It made me felt really deplorable thinking that there was really a prince who would say something like that.

「You've been eating tasty things in the palace since childhood haven't you? Just endure a bit with your own portion.」

「This is because all of Marie's cooking are novel foods. They're also delicious! That's why I'm jealous.」

Julius was suddenly boasting about his lover. What would be the right answer to give him here?

When I looked toward Marie, she had already finished her egg and bacons and brought a new toast from the kitchen to the table. She was having seconds even in breakfast. It made me really curious just where she was saving that much food inside that small body.

「Uhyoooo! This slightly expensive jam spread really well on the bread.」

She chose the jam she liked from among the jam bottles that were lined up on the table and spread it on her bread before eating the toast.

「Haa~ being able to choose jam in the morning is happiness」

It seemed she was feeling happiness from having different types of jams, but as for me—I felt like crying.

「You can, taste happiness just from this much?」

She had become a very simple woman.

Even though in our past life she was the type of woman who would pester me for money to travel abroad...

Cara was begging Marie for the jam.

「Marie-sama, I want the orange jam!」

「Okay. Spread a lot of it on your bread. We have a lot of breads and jams!」

Kyle was spreading blueberry jam on his bread.

「—Not having to worry about your meal is happiness.」

Why did eating with Marie's group was making me wanted to cry like this?

I stopped thinking about it and focused on eating the nostalgic breakfast. Then Noelle peered onto my face.

「Leon, the corner of your mouth got something on it.」

「Relaly? I'll wipe it later so it's fine.」

「Don't do that. You're a count, so you need to act properly.」

She said that and wiped the corner of my mouth for me.

A gal who was considerate and attentive was really great.

I might fall in love with her if I didn't already have Ange and Livia.

Julius seemed like he wasn't used with eating toast and the area around his mouth got dirty. He was bothered by it.

「The toast is delicious, but it's easy for the pan to crumble and leaving behind scraps.」

Jilk was also of the same opinion.

「Indeed. Isn't there any way to prevent this from happening?」

Greg who was heartily eating his portion gave the two of them advice.

「Just eat the food without worrying about that.」

The breakfast was really lively.

Noelle was smiling.

「What is it?」

「I'm just having fun somehow. I was always eating breakfast with my little sister, but it has been a long time since I have this much fun.」

「—Did something happen?」

I had heard that her relationship with her little sister wasn't going well, but Noelle didn't talk much about it.

「Well, various things happened. But Lelia herself is also worrying about me.」

So even twins got their own problem.

.

### Part 3

The mansion where Marie's group was living was a splendid one.

It also had a reception room in it that could be used to serve visiting guest.

There were sofas inside the room with a low table placed between them. A full set of furniture was also placed inside the room so that it wouldn't be discourteous toward the guest.

It must be the embassy that prepared them.

I got the impression that they spent money for the necessary things so that there wouldn't be any problem occurring because Julius was also living here.

My own house also had a reception room, but it wasn't as splendid as this room in Marie's mansion.

Right now I was preparing tea for a guest inside that room.

「—E-enjoy.」

「Thank you for the tea.」

The figure sitting on the sofa while drinking the tea elegantly looked very beautiful.

For those who didn't know about this person's personality, she would only look like a noble lady.

The girl—no, she had already graduated from the academy, so I should call her a woman, she had long blonde hair that was styled into ringlets.

Her name was Deirdre Fou Roseblade.

She was an upperclassman I was acquainted with.

「It has been a long time since I have your tea. Has your skill become slightly better?」

This person wasn't the type to say flattery, so she must have really enjoyed the tea.

「Perhaps it's because Alzer's tea leaves that are delicious?」

「Is that so? Then perhaps I'll buy some for souvenir when going home.」

Deirdre-senpai drank her tea happily. But still, why was she coming to Alzer?

—I didn't know why.

「Err, could it be you are in a trip right now?」

Deirdre-senpai smiled at me.

「How rude. I come here for work even though I look like this. His majesty asked me 『I want you to examine the situation in Alzer right now』 . That's right, I'm also asked by his majesty to give you a letter.」

I received the letter and read the content.

〔How dare you caused a trouble in Alzer, you shitty brat. We are short of manpower right now so we even have to recruit students who are fresh out of academy. Oops, on that topic, it seems that the girl I dispatched is your acquaintance isn't it? —Get along well with her. Though I'll tell Redgrave House if you have an affair there! By your magnificent king〕

I expressionlessly tore the letter.

Deirdre-senpai seemed to guess the content of the letter from my reaction and smiled pleasantly.

〔You're really on good terms with his majesty.〕

〔Ahahaha! —Indeed. We are so close that we want to punch each other's face.〕

If I could I wanted to bury my fist into Roland's face right now.

Setting that aside, it seemed Deirdre-senpai was dispatched here in order to investigate the case this time.

There was a bit of problem with her personality, but it seemed she intended to do her job properly.

〔I have heard about the situation in general at the embassy. I heard how a son of a great noble picked a fight with you and you beat him up thoroughly in a duel—it sent me shivers to hear that.〕

Deirdre-senpai blushed and put her index finger on her lips—she was a pervert.

「As expected from the kingdom's hero. You even beat up the six great nobles and contributed in elevating the kingdom's standing. How wonderful. —It has been a long time since my heart beat this fast.」

How should I reply to Deirdre-senpai who had this look of ecstasy in her face?

「—Are you coming here today just for a greeting?」

「How can that be. I come bringing souvenir for you. —Don't you want to know the action that Alzer is taking in regard with this case? I have information that you can't learn as an oversea student here.」

It seemed she would tell me an information that she learned from her work.

Luxion was also gathering information for me, but let's at least listened to what she had because she was doing this out of the kindness of her heart.

「Is there any interesting information?」

「The kingdom demanded Alzer to hand over Pierre who inflicted his highness Julius with a curse. But they didn't comply and rejected the demand.」

「Is Faivel House protecting Pierre?」

I thought that sounded plausible, but Deirdre-senpai was chukling in response.

「Your relationship with your family must be good. You were raised in a warm household weren't you?」

「Eh? No, my relationship with my sisters aren't that good—」

「This Pierre who caused all these problems, it looked like he planned to remove his big brother who will be the next head and become the head of the house himself. It seemed the next house head got furious from that.」

—Protectionless.

Noble who got their divine protection taken away would be disdained as protectionless in the commonwealth.

There were several reasons for that. One of them was that the sacred tree had turned its back on them.

I also heard that the descendant of someone whose divine protection had been taken away would never be able to obtain divine protection themselves.

In other words, Pierre's life as a noble was finished completely.

He couldn't even be used for political marriage anymore.

—I drove him into a corner even knowing that.

「Is he imprisoned? Or perhaps he got “sick” or something?」

Deirdre-senpai took off her eyes from me and began to fiddle with her ringlets.

「They said he committed suicide to take responsibility. But from how furious the next head was, it's possible that he is being imprisoned underground somewhere and tortured there.」

「Alzer's noble is cold toward their own family.」

「I think it's the same even in Hohlfahrt.」

Was this what they called the dark part of nobility? I absolutely didn't want to get involved with it.

「——Didn't you corner him like that while knowing such fate might be waiting for him?」

Deirdre-senpai asked me like that. I couldn't say that I didn't feel guilt.

But, everything was Pierre's own responsibility.

「He reaped what he sow. That's all there is to it. To begin with, after doing something like that to our stupid prince, I have to settle the score with him. —It was Pierre who started it.」

Deirdre-senpai was also a noble's daughter. She looked satisfied by my answer.

「Good. If you say something like, I didn't intend to go that far and regret it, then I'll have to slap you.」

—If it was Livia here, would she be angry?

Deirdre-senpai told me more information.

「Other than that, the academy will also reopen without accident. All of you should continue your study there like before. However, please be very careful.」

「Ee~, I'm the one who have to be careful?」

「Of course you have to. I will return immediately to bring this information back to the kingdom, but another person should be dispatched for the actual negotiation.」

This was an international problem after all. If they were going to negotiate, they had to prepare the proper officials.

My previous negotiation with the six great nobles in the end was only my personal negotiation.

Deirdre-senpai stood up.

「I'm busy even though it looks like I'm free, so excuse me for now.  
Ah, that's right」

When I stood up to see her off, Deirdre-senpai handed me two pieces of letters.

「Send words to them properly. They were really worried you know?」

These were letters from Ange and Livia.

.

#### Part 4

『Leon-san, are you well? Are you injured or sick? Are you eating properly?』

.

Tears were coming out while I was reading the letter from Livia who was worried for me.

Ange's letter was also similar.

She wrote to me that if something happened in Alzer, just run away and returned back safely.

She was more worried for my safety rather than honor. It was an unusual stance for a noble.

I carefully folded the letters and kept them properly inside the table's drawer.

Luxion who was watching me looked slightly apologetic.

『—My main body got closer to the commonwealth just in case there was an emergency. Currently it's impossible to communicate using mail.』

Luxion acted as relay to exchange mails while he was stationed in the halfway point between the kingdom and the commonwealth.

But currently his main body had drawn near to the commonwealth and the exchange of mails became impossible due to various factors like magic element's density and the like.

「I've come to grips with it because it can't be helped. When will you return your main body to its original position?」

『That depends on the situation. It's still on standby in the commonwealth even now. There is also the repair and resupply for Einhorn and Arroganz.』

Currently Luxion was in the middle of cleaning Einhorn and Arroganz that got dirtied by Pierre's decoration.

「I guess I'll write another letter. I should send some souvenir too.」

『That will be good.』

I sat on the chair and looked up to the ceiling. Then Luxion talked to me.

『—Is Pierre's fate weighing on master's mind?』

「It's that guy's own fault.」

Everything that he had done until now was befalling himself now. That was all.

I got no sympathy for him. But, it was the fact that I was the one who cornered him into that.

『Master, actually there is one thing that is bothering me—』

Just when Luxion was about to say something, the room's door was opened roughly and Marie entered with a yell.

「Big broooo!」

I narrowed my eyes toward Marie.

「At least knock before entering.」

「It's fine. I don't have any interest in whatever big bro might be doing! Ah!? That's not it! A-actually there is a guest!」

「Again」

While I was thinking who was it this time, Marie waved her hands around while saying.

「It's Lelia! What's more that girl—is a reincarnator!」

「Eh?」

I couldn't comprehend what Marie was saying.

.

## Part 5

Noelle was also there when I entered the reception room.

「Ah, Leon」

It seemed they were talking about something, but it didn't look like the topic of the talk was really pleasant.

Noelle's expression was cloudy, while Lelia was glaring at me and Marie.

Then her eyes opened wide when she noticed Luxion floating on my right shoulder.

She was clearly on her guard and seemed to know about Luxion.

「Noelle—can you let us talk with your sister for a bit?」

「I don't mind but」

Noelle looked toward Lelia. In respond Lelia crossed her legs with a brazen expression as though to say bring it on.



「It's okay. It looks like big sis has been in your debt, and I also have many things to say.」

Lelia folded her arms. Noelle looked like she didn't know what to say to her.

「Lelia, don't say anything uncalled for to them.」

After Noelle left the room, Marie looked alternately between my face and Lelia's with a troubled look.

I asked straight to Lelia.

「Are you a reincarnator too?」

「That's right. I was reincarnated as the main character's twin little sister. —Even though I had my own plans, all of them are now messed up because of you guys.」

「I apologize about that.」

I sat on the sofa with Marie following to sit beside me.

Luxion looked at Lelia.

『And, what are you looking for that you come here?』

Lelia turned her gaze from Luxion to me.

「How do you have a cheat item with you?」

「I worked hard to get him.」

「—Well, it's not really my business.」

Lelia looked discontent with my answer. Even so she talked about the reason she came to our mansion.

「I'm asking you to return big sis to me. Together with the sacred tree's sapling if possible.」

The way she spoke was one-sided that Marie got irritated instead of me.

「Haa? Why do we have to follow your instruction?」

「The sacred tree's sapling will wither if it's not being hold by big sis who has the aptitude as the priestess! Do you two not even know that? The development from now will all go wrong if the sapling withered!」

That must be something that Lelia couldn't allow from where she was standing.

It wasn't like I had a problem with her demand but—there was one thing that bothered me.

「Priestess aptitude? Wait a second, don't you also have that aptitude?」

Lelia's wording bothered me that I tried asking her. In respond her gaze to me clearly turned into a ridiculing gaze.

「I don't have the aptitude. Big sis is the only one with the aptitude to become the priestess.」

Marie started breaking into cold sweat.

「Eh, wait. Wait a second. Aren't you two twins? It shouldn't be strange for the two of you two have the aptitude. You know, just like how you two split the twintail to become matching side tail with each other.」

Lelia said 「Our hair style doesn't have anything to do with it!」 before talking about the priestess's aptitude.

「Before Lespinasse House was destroyed, my parents said that big sis is the only one with the priestess aptitude while I have none.」

I was shaken hearing that and turned my gaze toward Luxion.

『There was a mention in the document of the six great nobles that the priestess was decided based on bloodline though?』

Lelia denied Luxion's information.

「My parents, the previous priestess and guardian said that I don't have the aptitude. It's impossible for them to be wrong. Besides, the priestess carries the role to connect the sacred tree with the people. The priestess said that I don't have the aptitude, so obviously she is in the right rather than some document somewhere.」

Lelia's assertion made Marie and I to hold our head in our wits' end.

「No way. Our plan to make Lelia the priestess and Emile the guardian-」

「Luxion you liarrrrr!」

Lelia looked at us in disgust.

「Do you understand just how much I have prepared until now? My house was burned and I got chased away when I was a child, after that I worked hard to look after big sis until we came to the academy. I thought that big sis can finally become Loic's lover and the danger to the world would be averted, and yet.」

She was saying things that caught my attention.

「Wait a second. Could it be, you are the one who set Loic after Noelle?」

「That's right. The true end of the second game was also centered around Loic. It's big sis's fate to be together with Loic.」

True end—was that the one you called the true ending? It seemed that the best conclusion of that otome game's sequel was where Noelle and Loic became together.

I made a complicated expression. Seeing that Lelia said 「What? Got any complaint?」 .

「It's more a question than a complaint. Noelle, she hates Loic doesn't she?」

I asked for agreement from Marie.

「Yeah. I think Loic is the only one that she won't want to be with. Because she looks like she really hate him. I've seen something like that before. Her hate looks like it's already at the level that it's physiologically impossible for her to accept him. I think it's absolutely impossible for those two to become lovers.」

If someone that I liked told me something like 「it's physiologically impossible for me to be with you」 , I wouldn't be able to get back on my feet for three days.

Lelia was also a woman, so it seemed she get what Marie was talking about.

「B-but, in that otome game, big sis and Loic were—」

Marie stared at Lelia with a face of comprehension.

「In this world we won't need to go through any hardship if things can progress just like in the game.」

Marie's words were surely filled with various meanings.

It made a bit sad.

「You have gone through a lot of hardships until now. Though the cause of your failure was because you aimed to have reverse harem.」

Marie wiped her eyes with her sleeve.

「Don't say it. I'm regretting it already.」

Then Lelia said.

「Ha? No way? Don't tell me, you aimed for something like reverse harem? Uwa~, aiming for reverse harem in real world , you're unbelievable.」

Marie strongly objected after seeing Lelia's appalled look.

「Shut up! If there is happiness just lying around over there, then it's only human to pick it up! Besides, even you also laid your hand on that safe tile Emile!」

「I sincerely chose only one person!」

「Hah! Sincere you say? You only chose him because you knew that he was someone rich from a good family weren't you? It's laughable that you call that being sincere.」

As fellow woman—they were able to guess what each other was thinking. It ended up becoming a horrible exchange of insult.

「I'm still better than you who aimed for reverse harem!」

「You were only narrowing down your target to one person, but what you did is basically the same like me!」

「Don't group me with you!」

The two were escalating and they proceeded into starting a cat fight.

They grabbed the other's hair, grabbed the other's clothes, and insulted each other.

What came to my mind while watching the state of the two was,

「Uwaa~, this is ugly.」

『I agree.』

Marie and Lelia finally ran out of breath and stopped their quarrel. I got the talk back into the right track then.

「Well, in any case all of us here wish to avoid the danger to the world. We should be able to work together.」

Based from this talk with Lelia, it seemed like she also wanted to avoid the danger to the world.

Then we reincarnators shouldn't fight each other.

「What do you mean working together? You crushed Pierre's event and separate big sis from Loic.」

I watched Lelia putting her messed up hair and uniform in order while giving an insincere apology.

「Sorry. But it can't be helped because Pierre picked a fight with us. We also have our own position to think about. As for Loic, he is giving off this dangerous vibe. We're just saying that it's better to not choose him.」

「Loic's desire to monopolize is just a bit strong. It's also his charm. He will calm down a bit if big sis becomes his lover.」

A bit? That was a bit!? —I really don't get girl.

Lelia complained to me.

「More importantly, it's a problem that you crushed Pierre's event! That event was really important you know!? What's more, will you normally corner someone until that far!? I heard from Emile, that Pierre right now is in a really bad situation!」

It seemed Lelia saw the duel. She was looking appalled.

「It was Pierre's fault for picking a fight with me. Besides, it's true I cornered him, but he was ruined because of his own habitual bad deeds. That's not my fault. To begin with it's his own fault for getting cornered.」

「You're the worst.」

Marie got up while Lelia was glaring at me.

「Pierre has nothing that worth giving him any sympathy though? Well, just forget about him, you should work together with us.」

We could work together because both sides had the same objective.

Lelia also looked dissatisfied, but she might wanted our cooperation too because she accepted this talk.

「—Anyway, return back big sis and the sacred tree's sapling.」

I took out the case that was filled with sapling-chan. I had brought it with me because I thought it would be necessary in our discussion.

I placed it on the low table.

「You don't need to worry if it's about this thing. It's placed inside a special case, so it won't wither for now—e-eh?」

My right hand started shining.

At the same time it felt like sapling-chan was also shining.

「Big bro, the back of your right hand!」

Marie suddenly said that, so I looked at the back of my right hand. There, some kind of crest was forming.

「What's this!? Hey, what's this!!?」

Lelia who was watching me kicking a fuss made a face as though she was watching an unbelievable scene.

「W-why!? Why is the “guardian’s crest” is forming on this guy’s hand!?!」

Luxion spoke in enjoyment while watching us making a ruckus.

『Oh, this thing has a discerning eye. It seems the sacred tree’s sapling has deemed my master to be worthy as the guardian and choose him.』

「MEEEEEE!?!」

Sapling-chan chose me as its guardian even though it still hadn’t chosen the priestess.

Originally it should be Noelle—the main character who chose the guardian from among the capture targets, but for some reason it was the sapling itself who chose me.

There was a limit even in being unexpected.

—Oi, what will happen from now!?

.

Part 6

At the academy of Hohlfahrt Kingdom.

Livia and Ange were having tea with grave expressions.

Creare was floating near the two of them.

〔That sourpuss Luxion is still not contacting.〕

Livia who was praying for Leon's safety from here looked down in worry.

「Do you think our letters has reached Leon-san?」

Ange was drinking her tea calmly, but she was also feeling concerned at the inside.

「Despite her appearances, Deirdre is a woman who keeps her promise. She will deliver our letter without fail.」

However that was only if the situation was one where the letter could be delivered.

The two of them didn't know how Leon was doing right now in this situation where there was no information coming from the commonwealth.

They wished they could quickly head to the commonwealth personally, but they were ordered to stay put because the situation there was unknown.

「—She should be arriving in Alzer around this time.」

They were able to exchange letters frequently before because of Luxion, but normally obtaining information would take a long time just like now.

Creare consoled the two worried girls.

『It will be fine. Master is someone tenacious, and I don't think that there is enemy there that can defeat Luxion. Surely they are just busy with taking care of the troublesome matters.』

Livia nodded.

『I hope that's the case here.』

Ange sighed slightly.

『But that guy is reckless sometimes. Even so, just what in the world is going on in the commonwealth?』

Creare showed its motivation after seeing the two worrying like this.

『I understand. Then I'll try investigating for a bit.』

Livia lifted up her face.

『You can do that Are-chan?』

『Leave it to me. I have sent a relay for communication to there. Though its performance isn't good and Luxion won't like it, so this will be more like hacking.』

Ange threw away the composure that she had maintained until now and jumped at that offer.

『I don't care how you do it! Just do it immediately if you can check how Leon is doing there right now.』

『I will be able to obtain only fragmentary information though.』

『I don't mind that. If Leon is safe then—』

Ange placed her hands on her chest and prayed for Leon's safety. After seeing how anxious Ange was, Creare performed an unauthorized access into Luxion.

Creare's blue lens emitted a blue glow.

『Then, I'm going to investigate for a bit. Err~, the position of Luxion's main body right now is—』

Livia joined her hands together in a praying gesture.

『Leon-san—please be safe.』

Ange hugged Livia's shoulder from the side.

『It will be fine. Leon is strong after all.』

Then—.

『—Hyaaaa!』

—Creare let out a strange voice.

Livia stood up.

『Are-chan, what's wrong!?』

Ange grabbed Creare with both her hands.

Her eyes were very serious.

『What happened!? Is Leon safe!?』

Creare told the two the information that it had gathered.

『About that—I managed to obtain Luxion's log. I could only obtain completely trivial information.』

『A, and!?』

Livia asked Creare to continue. Creare looked really hesitant to answer her.

It made the two even more anxious.

『That's—I was able to confirm master's safety. It looks like Luxion is also properly staying at master's side. Ah, Marie-chan and others are also safe.』

Ange and Livia grasped each other's hands with their palms pressed on each other.

They pressed their body together and their large breasts were flattened against each other.

「I see, so Leon is safe!」

「That's great, Ange!」

They didn't ask about Marie and others at all. They were simply relieved hearing that Leon was safe.

The two of them were smiling happily, but—.

『B-but you see. That's—the place where master is staying right now—is in the same place where Marie and others are living in.』

Shadow appeared in the two's smile.

Livia became concerned for Ange.

「Ange, surely there is a reason why they are living together.」

Ange's cheeks were twitching.

「You're right, there must be a reason. Perhaps the official there couldn't obtain a place for Leon to stay separately from them. It must be that kind of reason. That must be how it is. If not, Leon staying in the same house with that woman is just—」

And then Creare told the two of them about another information it obtained from the log—some words that Luxion murmured.

『The information that I obtained is varied and fragmentary so it doesn't form a clear picture but, I managed to pick up some words that Luxion murmured. Let's see here—he once muttered “now in the middle of cheating”.』

The two's expression and—the light in their eyes vanished from their face.

## **Afterword**

What do you think about this volume? I hope it's enjoyable for you readers.

This is the author Mishima Yomu.

Finally The World of Otome Game is Tough For Mob has reached volume 4.

This is also thanks to the support that you readers have shown!  
Thank you very much!

I wish to keep proceeding until the conclusion with this momentum, so please keep supporting this work from here on too.

Now then, from the fourth volume the tale is progressing with the stage moving to Alzer Commonwealth.

It's the stage of the sequel of "that otome game", so Leon and Marie tackled the challenge with their all this time too—it's that kind of development.

About the fourth volume, actually there are several points here that have been greatly altered from the web version.

First is the entrance of the villainess and also a new character, Louise.

She doesn't make any appearance in the web version, so she is a light novel only character.

Please look forward how Louise will get involved with Leon and others from here on.

The other change is Noelle.

I also drastically changed my treatment of Noelle.

Noelle made a shocking entrance in the web version, but this time she has already appeared from the beginning.

A lively Noelle has gotten involved with Leon and co from the very beginning.

Also, there is her hairstyle too I guess.

I was unable to decide Noelle's hairstyle until the very last second (sweat).

She has twintail in the web version, but from there various things happened it ended up changed into side ponytail.

It was good and all until that point, but the problem was Mondasensei.

Noelle's rough designs that he sent to me were all good that I couldn't choose.

I was still hesitating to choose one of them until the very end.

I remember talking with the editor something like 「It has to be draft A or draft C—but draft B is also hard to discard」 .

—Every single one of them was cute I was at a lost (lol).

Next is Loic.

He was the character called “Eric” in the web version, but there are a lot of names that sounds similar so I changed his name.

There isn't any deep meaning to it.

There are also other several small changes, but there won't be any end to it if I list up all of them, so let me stop here.

Well then, please keep supporting The World of Otome Game is Tough For Mob from here on too!

## ***Extra Story - Leon's Foreign School Life***

I never thought that I would study abroad in my second life.

I was walking alone in the academy of Alzer Commonwealth.

Unfamiliar uniform.

Unfamiliar school building.

Even the smell of the foreign land felt different.

This smell forced me to notice whether I wanted it or not that I was in a foreign country.

—I want to go home to my home country quickly and have a tea party with my fiancées.

I was invincible now that I had been liberated from the marriage hunting.

If it was now I had the confidence that I could enjoy the life in the academy.

And yet, right now I was in the middle of studying abroad—how could I enjoy myself like this?

「Aa~, I want to go home quickly」

『It has only been several days since master come here. Your wish is obviously impossible.』

It was my partner Luxion who answered my muttering seriously.

He was replying to my joke with sarcasm too today.

『Master shouldn't come here if you don't want to.』

「I wish that I can do that instead of going through all these hardships.」

If only that otome game didn't have a sequel, I wouldn't need to go to an academy at a foreign country.

In my past life I was the type of human who would go 「Studying abroad? Not interested」 .

That thinking hadn't changed even after I reincarnated.

I couldn't enjoy going abroad to study at all.

「To begin with there isn't any chance for me to hold a tea party here. Even though I've painstakingly brought my tea set here, there isn't any chance to use them. This is just strange.」

『Master is still going on about tea party?』

「Obviously! That's my hobby.」

I was awakened to a new hobby after meeting master.

It was tea.

You gathered tea set, prepared tea leaves and snacks, then entertained your guest.

I made fun of it at first, but after that I would hold a tea party once a week when I was at Hohlfahrt.

At most I would invite three people to my tea party.

Inviting girls who I were close with and having pleasant chat with them was my modest enjoyment.

But I couldn't open such tea party in this academy.

「—I want to go home.」

『Master want to go home just because of tea? Then how about master just invite some girls from here?』

『You moron! I can't invite other girls when I already have fiancées!』

『Why is master's thought going to girls right away there? Master can also invite boys.』

『No way. I don't have friend here anyway.』

I still didn't have friend because I had only arrived in this country.

『—There are Marie, Julius, and the others.』

『No~, that's hard to do. Marie is my little sister in my past life. As for Julius and others—they aren't my friends, they are just a troublesome bunch. That's not what you call friends.』

『I am really happy to have a master who have few friends.』

This guy's personality was really a piece of work from how he was teasing me for my lack of friends like this.

—He is quite human even though he is an AI. He is hopeless.

『Forget about that, we got a lot to—oops』

There were female students walking to my direction from ahead in the corridor.

They were holding some items on their hands.

Luxion melted into the surrounding and vanished from view. Then I called out to the girls approaching me.

The girls were looking bewildered. —In the kingdom's academy, it was the boys' role to immediately lend a hand if you happened to see some girls having their hands full.

The attitude toward girl that had been imprinted on me through the one year I spent in the kingdom's academy showed up even in the academy here.

「Those looks heavy. I'll help out.」

The girls looked at my face in surprise.

If this was in the kingdom—the girls of the academy there would generally reply with 「Haa? Why are you speaking something so obvious? Take off these things already from our hands」 .

The boys would still have to help them even after receiving such ungrateful reply. That was my daily life back in the kingdom's academy.

Surely the girls in the academy here would also give me a horrible reply as befitting the world of that otome game. That was what I thought.

The girls were looking shy.

「Eh, you will?」

「This person, is her perhaps the overseas student?」

I took the burdens from the two girls a bit forcefully. They were looking embarrassed when I asked them where to bring these things to.

—What is this? Their behavior is strange.

They weren't hurling abuse at me!?

「Never mind that, where should I bring these things to?」

The two girls looked shy while—.

「Ah, we have to bring them to the staff room. It was really heavy and difficult to carry. Thanks for helping us.」

「You are a big help. Thank you.」

—Thanking me.

I couldn't hide my shaken expression.

My movement stopped for a moment, causing the two girls to be worried for me.

「Are you alright?」

「Don't force yourself if they're too heavy.」

My understanding of the matter was delayed for a moment, but I finally realized that this was the commonwealth, not the kingdom.

There was no lover that was guised as exclusive servant accompanying the girls in this academy.

They weren't acting haughty while looking down on boys.

Such a normal—academy, it was like a heaven for me.

「I-I'm fine! This much is no problem at all. Come on, let's deliver them quickly.」

The two girls smiled.

「You're a big help. The boys in our class will run away from this kind of thing.」

「You overseas students are really gentlemanly.」

I was praised? Could it be, they were praising me?

I was praised just for doing something like this. Was this academy a heaven!?

If the kingdom's academy where I got insulted even after helping was a black company, then perhaps the academy here was white?

「You girls are exaggerating. This is just a normal thing to do.」

I told them with a smile, but the two girls gave me words of flattery in response.

「You overseas student are kind.」

「I wish the boys here will learn from you. Ah, come to think of it we haven't asked your name. What is it again?」

I introduced myself with my best posed look.

「I'm Leon. Leon Fou Bartfalt. Just call me Leon without any honorific.」

Then the two girls happily—.

「Got it. Thanks for your help, Leon.」

「Leon eh. That's a good name.」

—Conversed with me eagerly. Eagerly!

They weren't replying with 「Uh huh. And?」 when I introduced myself!

I—got the feeling that I would be able to enjoy my time in this academy.

I kept walking toward the staff room while having a fun talk with the two girls. Then Luxion muttered from nearby.

『—Master looks like you're having a lot of fun.』

I replied with a small voice.

『Yeah, it looks like I'll be able to enjoy my time here. I'm—glad I went to study overseas.』

I got the feeling that I would be able to experience a fun school life if it was here.

『I will report to those two if master is cheating. Angelica and Olivia, both of them will be sad if that happens.』

—I'm just having a casual talk here! When you think about my grey school life before this, no one shouldn't be able to blame me just for having a bit of fun!

『I think it will be for master's own sake to get harshly scolded by those two at least once.』

This guy really didn't think of his master as master.

『I should be forgiven from just having a bit of fun. Yes—this isn't cheating. This is cultural exchange between students of different countries.』

I muttered with a small voice to convince myself.

I was convincing myself that there wasn't anything wrong with my thinking.

『I'm looking forward whether those two will really forgive master or not after hearing that excuse.』

This guy was really detestable.

—Livia and Ange would surely allow me this much!



## ***Credits***

Translation Group: [bakapervert](#)

EPUB is done by JLN

*Download all your fav Light Novels at*

*Just Light Novels*